

This is the first draft of a new revision of:

חזוק אמונה

(Faith Strengthened)

by Isaac Ben Abraham of Troki

"Know, therefore, this day, and reflect in thy heart, that the Lord He is God, in heaven above, and on the earth beneath, there is none else." — Deuteronomy 4:39

Formatted by Vaughn Seward from:
<http://faithstrengthened.org/index.html>
Tevet 13, 5768 (December 22, 2007)

From The Jewish Encyclopedia pp. 265-266:

Isaac ben Abraham Troki: Karaite polemical writer; born at Troki 1533; died in the same city 1594. He was instructed in Bible and Hebrew literature by the Karaite scholar Zephaniah ben Mordecai, and in Latin and Polish literatures by Christian teachers. Moving in Christian circles, Troki was often called upon to take part in religious controversies; and this prompted him to study religious philosophy and Christian theology and to acquaint himself with the tenets of the various Christian sects. In the course of his studies he became interested in the anti-Christian and anti-Jewish writings of his contemporaries and compatriots Nicholas Paruta, Martin Czechowic, and Simon Budni. To refute the arguments of the writers against the Jewish religion and to show the superiority of Judaism, Troki wrote his epoch-making "Hizzuk Emunah".

This work is in two volumes, containing ninety-nine chapters in all. The author begins by demonstrating that Jesus was not the Messiah predicted by the Prophets. "This", he says, "is evident (1) from his pedigree, (2) from his acts, (3) from the period in which he lived, and (4) from the fact that during his lifetime the promises that related to the advent of the expected Messiah were not fulfilled." His arguments on these points are as follows: (1) Jesus' pedigree: Without discussing the question of the relationship of Joseph to David, which is more than doubtful, one may ask, What has Jesus to do with Joseph, who was not his father? (2) His acts: According to Matt. x. 34, Jesus said, "Think not that I am come to make peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother-in-law." On the other hand, Holy Writ attributes to the true and expected Messiah actions contrary to those of Jesus. (3) The period of his existence: It is evident that Jesus did not come at the time foretold by the Prophets; for they predicted the advent of the Messiah in the "last days" (Isa. ii.2). (4) The fulfillment of the Messianic promises: All the Prophets predicted that at the advent of the Messiah peace and justice would reign in the world, not only among men, but even among the animals; yet there is not one sincere Christian who would claim that this has been fulfilled.

Among Troki's objections to the divinity of Jesus the following may be mentioned: The Christian who opposes Judaism must believe that the Jews tormented and crucified Jesus either with his consent or against his will. If with his consent, then the Jews had ample sanction for what they did. Besides, if Jesus was really willing to meet such a fate, what cause was there for complaint and affliction? And why did he pray in the manner related in Matt. xxvi. 39? On the other hand, if it be assumed that the crucifixion was against his will, how then can he be regarded as God-he, who was unable to resist the power of those who brought him to the cross? How could one who had not the power to save his own life be held as the Savior of all mankind ("Hizzuk Emunah," ch. xlvi.). In the last chapter Troki quotes Rev. xxii. 18, and asks how Christians could consistently make changes of so glaring a nature; for the change of the Sabbath from the seventh to the first day of the week was not authorized by Jesus or by any of his disciples. Moreover, partaking of the blood and flesh of a strangled beast is a palpable infringement of the dictates of the Apostles.

Troki died before completing his work, the index and preface to which were made by his pupil Joseph ben Mordecai Malinovski Troki. The "Hizzuk Emunah" remained for many years in manuscript, and the text underwent many changes at the hands of the copyist. One rabbi went so far as to substitute for many of Troki's philosophical arguments Talmudic sayings. The work was first published, with a Latin translation, by Wagenseil in his "Tela Ignea Satanae" (Freiberg, 1681), and was reprinted in Amsterdam (1705), Jerusalem (1845) and Leipsic (1857). It was also translated into Judaeo-German (Amsterdam, 1717), into English by Mocatta (London, 1851), into German by David Deutsch (Sohran, 1865, 2d ed. 1873, with the Hebrew text) and into Spanish, the last-mentioned translation being extant in manuscript. Through its Latin translation the "Hizzuk Emunah" became the object of passionate debates in Christian circles; and its arguments against Christianity were used by all freethinkers. Voltaire gives the following appreciation

of it: “Il a rassemble toutes les difficultes que les incredules ont prodiguees depuis. Enfin les incredules les plus determines n’ont presque rien allegue qui ne soit dans le Rempart de la Foi du rabbin Issac” (“Melanges,” iii. 334).

Simhah Luzki mentions two other works by Troki; namely, a treatise on the new moon, according to the “Gan ‘Eden” of Aaron the Younger, and a work, in the form of questions and answers, on the slaughtering of animals, also according to the “Gan Eden.” Troki composed also liturgical poems, some of which have been inserted in the Karaite Siddur.

BIBLIOGRAPHY: Furst, *Gesch. des Karaert.* iii. 30 et seq.; Neubauer, *Aus der Petersburger Bibliothek*, p. 64; Geiger, *Nachgelassene Schriften*, pp. 178-224, Berlin, 1876; Gottlober, *Bikkoret le-Toledot ha-Kara'im*, p. 184; Gratz, *Gesch.* ix. 490; Fuenn, *Kenest Yisrael*, p. 614. J. I. BR.

From The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia, New York Vol. 10 pp. 311-312:

ISSAC BEN ABRAHAM TROKI, polemical writer (b. Troki, 1533; d. Troki, 1594 [or eight years earlier, in both cases, according to Jacob Mann’s hypothesis]). His knowledge of the Latin and Polish languages and of Christian dogmatics enabled him to engage in amicable conversations on religious subjects not only with Roman Catholic, Protestant, and Greek Orthodox clergymen, but also with Socinian and other sectarian elders. The fruit of these personal contacts, and of Isaac Troki’s concurrent extensive reading in the New Testament and the Christian theological and anti-Jewish literature, was his famous apology of Judaism entitled *Hizzuk Emunah* (Fortification of Faith). He himself did not live to complete it, but his pupil, Joseph Malinowski Troki, supplied the preface and index from the author’s own written notes and oral remarks.

The work at once won extensive popularity both because of its powerful defense of the Jewish faith and because of its calm and reasonable emphasis of the vulnerable points in Christian tradition and dogmatics. It was studiously copied by interested Jewish readers, some of whom inevitably felt called upon to modify the work in the light of their own views and beliefs. A suggestion, made about 1629 by Zerah ben Nathan Troki to Manasseh ben Israel at Amsterdam, to print the work was, as was to be expected, rejected by that eminently wise Jewish leader. But one manuscript copy, modified and amplified by a Rabbinite copyist, came into the hands of the anti-Jewish Hebraist Johann Christoph Wagenseil, who published it, with a Latin translation and an extensive refutation, under the sensational title of *Tela ignea Satanae* (The Fiery Darts of Satan; Altorf, 1681). Far from squelching Isaac’s work, Wagenseil’s violent refutation of it merely publicized it and gave rise to numerous debates and controversies in Christian circles, while Isaac’s anti-Christian arguments were eventually taken over by the non-Jewish anti-clerical and liberal writers and philosophers of the 18th cent. No less an expert in polemics than Monsieur de Voltaire characterized the *Hizzuk Emunah* as a masterpiece in the treatment of its subject.

Wagenseil’s text of *Hizzuk Emunah* was reprinted for Jewish use at Amsterdam in 1705; a Yiddish translation appeared in the same place in 1717; an English translation by Moses Mocatta was printed for private circulation at London in 1851; a German translation, accompanied by a revised Hebrew text, was published by David Deutsch (2nd ed., Sohrau, 1873).

Two hymns by Isaac Troki are incorporated in the Karaite liturgy; he is also said to have composed works on Karaite ritual law.

Index of Scripture Passages quoted:**Genesis**

Genesis 1:26	Part 2 Chapter 96	Genesis 18:19	Part 1 Chapter 13
Genesis 2:17	Part 1 Chapter 11	Genesis 21:32	Part 1 Chapter 29
"	Part 1 Chapter 18	Genesis 22:18	Part 1 Chapter 13
Genesis 2:24	Part 2 Chapter 1	Genesis 24:10	Part 1 Chapter 41
Genesis 3:15	Part 1 Chapter 12	Genesis 24:14	Part 1 Chapter 21
Genesis 31:1	Part 1 Chapter 34	Genesis 24:20	Part 1 Chapter 22
Genesis 10:10	Part 1 Chapter 33	Genesis 24:28	Part 1 Chapter 21
Genesis 11:7	Part 1 Chapter 10	Genesis 25:17	Part 1 Chapter 11
Genesis 12:1	Part 1 Chapter 21	Genesis 25:23	Part 1 Chapter 22
Genesis 12:3	Part 1 Chapter 13	Genesis 25:8	Part 1 Chapter 18
"	Part 1 Chapter 22	Genesis 26:4	Part 1 Chapter 13
Genesis 13:15	Part 2 Chapter 90	Genesis 28:14	Part 1 Chapter 13
Genesis 13:16	Part 2 Chapter 90	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Genesis 14:18	Part 1 Chapter 40	Genesis 28:15	Part 1 Chapter 14
Genesis 15:5	Part 2 Chapter 90	Genesis 28:21	Part 1 Chapter 18
Genesis 15:7	Part 1 Chapter 34	Genesis 33:20	Part 1 Chapter 21
Genesis 15:13	Part 1 Chapter 11	Genesis 37:35	Part 1 Chapter 11
"	Part 2 Chapter 90	"	Part 1 Chapter 11
Genesis 15:14	Part 2 Chapter 62	"	Part 1 Chapter 11
Genesis 15:18	Part 1 Chapter 34	Genesis 39:20	Part 1 Chapter 9
Genesis 17:7	Part 1 Chapter 21	Genesis 46:27	Part 2 Chapter 63
Genesis 17:7-8	Part 1 Chapter 18	Genesis 49:8	Part 1 Chapter 14
Genesis 18:17	Part 1 Chapter 10	Genesis 49:10	Part 1 Chapter 14
Genesis 18:18	Part 1 Chapter 13		

Exodus

Exodus 2:8	Part 1 Chapter 21	Exodus 19:6	Part 1 Chapter 22
Exodus 2:25	Part 1 Chapter 35	Exodus 19:13	Part 1 Chapter 11
Exodus 3:12	Part 2 Chapter 62	Exodus 20:8	Part 1 Chapter 19
Exodus 4:22	Part 2 Chapter 68	Exodus 21:4	Part 1 Chapter 9
Exodus 4:22-23	Part 1 Chapter 45	Exodus 21:16	Part 1 Chapter 19
"	Part 2 Chapter 4	Exodus 21:20	Part 1 Chapter 11
Exodus 7:1	Part 1 Chapter 9	Exodus 22:8 [22:9]	Part 2 Chapter 51
Exodus 15:6	Part 1 Chapter 40	Exodus 22:9	Part 1 Chapter 9
Exodus 15:18	Part 1 Chapter 19	Exodus 22:30 [22:31]	Part 1 Chapter 41
Exodus 15:26	Part 1 Chapter 22	Exodus 23:4-5	Part 1 Chapter 45
Exodus 16:29	Part 1 Chapter 19	"	Part 2 Chapter 11
Exodus 17:15	Part 1 Chapter 21	Exodus 23:8	Part 1 Chapter 31
Exodus 19:5	Part 1 Chapter 22	Exodus 35:22	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 45		

Leviticus

Leviticus 7:27	Part 1 Chapter 11	Leviticus 23:29	Part 1 Chapter 18
Leviticus 11:8	Part 1 Chapter 15	Leviticus 26:11-12	Part 1 Chapter 18
Leviticus 11:43	Part 2 Chapter 18	Leviticus 26:31	Part 1 Chapter 17
Leviticus 11:43-44	Part 1 Chapter 15	Leviticus 26:34-35	Part 1 Chapter 7

Leviticus 18:5	Part 1 Chapter 11	Leviticus 26:38	Part 1 Chapter 7
"	Part 1 Chapter 18	"	Part 1 Chapter 7
"	Part 2 Chapter 77	"	Part 1 Chapter 7
Leviticus 19:17-18	Part 1 Chapter 45	Leviticus 26:39	Part 1 Chapter 11
Leviticus 19:17-18	Part 2 Chapter 11	Leviticus 26:42	Part 1 Chapter 17
Leviticus 19:18	Part 1 Chapter 45	"	Part 1 Chapter 29
"	Part 2 Chapter 54	Leviticus 26:44	Part 1 Chapter 7
Leviticus 20:25-26	Part 1 Chapter 15	"	Part 1 Chapter 27
Leviticus 22:3	Part 1 Chapter 11	"	Part 1 Chapter 27
"	Part 1 Chapter 18	"	Part 1 Chapter 46
Leviticus 22:33	Part 1 Chapter 25		

Numbers

Numbers 2:20	Part 1 Chapter 33	Numbers 23:10	Part 1 Chapter 18
Numbers 7:12	Part 1 Chapter 14	Numbers 24:17	Part 1 Chapter 6
Numbers 10:13	Part 1 Chapter 14	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
Numbers 10:32	Part 1 Chapter 13	Numbers 24:18-19	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 22	Numbers 25:9	Part 2 Chapter 86
Numbers 13:32	Part 1 Chapter 22	Numbers 25:12	Part 1 Chapter 29
Numbers 14:15-16	Part 1 Chapter 25	Numbers 25:13	Part 1 Chapter 21

Deuteronomy

Deuteronomy 1:10	Part 1 Chapter 13	Deuteronomy 28:57	Part 1 Chapter 14
Deuteronomy 3:3	Part 1 Chapter 6	Deuteronomy 28:64	Part 1 Chapter 6
Deuteronomy 3:24	Part 1 Chapter 25	Deut. 29:11 [29:12]	Part 1 Chapter 17
Deuteronomy 4:2	Part 1 Chapter 19	Deuteronomy 29:29	Part 1 Chapter 16
Deuteronomy 4:8	Part 1 Chapter 19	Deut. 30:1-10	Part 1 Chapter 17
Deuteronomy 4:30	Part 1 Chapter 27	Deuteronomy 30:1-6	Part 1 Chapter 7
Deuteronomy 4:30-31	Part 1 Chapter 6	Deuteronomy 30:1-8	Part 1 Chapter 27
Deuteronomy 4:35	Part 1 Chapter 10	Deuteronomy 30:2	Part 1 Chapter 45
Deuteronomy 4:39	Part 1 Chapter 10	Deuteronomy 30:3	Part 1 Chapter 45
Deuteronomy 6:4	Part 1 Chapter 10	Deuteronomy 30:3-6	Part 1 Chapter 6
Deuteronomy 6:25	Part 2 Chapter 93	Deuteronomy 30:5	Part 1 Chapter 22
Deuteronomy 7:6	Part 1 Chapter 6	Deuteronomy 30:6	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 7
Deuteronomy 7:15	Part 1 Chapter 46	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
Deuteronomy 7:24	Part 1 Chapter 14	Deuteronomy 30:7	Part 1 Chapter 46
Deuteronomy 10:22	Part 2 Chapter 63	Deut. 30:11-12	Part 1 Chapter 45
Deuteronomy 11:12	Part 1 Chapter 35	Deuteronomy 30:11	Part 2 Chapter 80
Deuteronomy 14:1	Part 2 Chapter 58	Deuteronomy 30:14	Part 1 Chapter 45
Deuteronomy 14:1-3	Part 1 Chapter 15	"	Part 2 Chapter 80
Deuteronomy 14:3	Part 1 Chapter 15	Deuteronomy 32:9	Part 1 Chapter 22
Deuteronomy 14:21	Part 1 Chapter 15	Deuteronomy 32:15	Part 1 Chapter 9
Deuteronomy 15:10	Part 1 Chapter 23	Deuteronomy 32:18	Part 2 Chapter 68
Deuteronomy 22:22	Part 2 Chapter 47	Deuteronomy 32:39	Part 1 Chapter 6
Deuteronomy 24:16	Part 1 Chapter 11	Deuteronomy 32:40	Part 1 Chapter 27
Deuteronomy 26:19	Part 1 Chapter 41	Deut. 32:46-47	Part 1 Chapter 18
Deuteronomy 27:26	Part 1 Chapter 16	Deuteronomy 32:50	Part 1 Chapter 11

Deuteronomy 28:1	Part 1 Chapter 19	"	Part 1 Chapter 18
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	Deuteronomy 33:4	Part 1 Chapter 19
Deuteronomy 28:10	Part 2 Chapter 71	Deuteronomy 33:21	Part 1 Chapter 14
Deuteronomy 28:15	Part 1 Chapter 16	Deuteronomy 33:29	Part 1 Chapter 18
Deuteronomy 28:25	Part 1 Chapter 17	"	Part 1 Chapter 18
Deuteronomy 28:47	Part 1 Chapter 23	"	Part 1 Chapter 18

Joshua

Joshua 7:7	Part 1 Chapter 36	Joshua 24:2	Part 1 Chapter 4
Joshua 7:8	Part 1 Chapter 36		

Judges

Judges 1:1	Part 1 Chapter 14	Judges 13:22	Part 2 Chapter 51
Judges 13:22	Part 1 Chapter 9		

1 Samuel

1 Samuel 1:22	Part 1 Chapter 26	1 Samuel 17:12	Part 1 Chapter 33
1 Samuel 2:7	Part 1 Chapter 35	1 Samuel 17:56	Part 1 Chapter 21
1 Samuel 4:21	Part 1 Chapter 34	1 Samuel 17:58	Part 1 Chapter 21
1 Samuel 8:7	Part 1 Chapter 14	1 Samuel 18:14	Part 1 Chapter 22
1 Samuel 12:22	Part 1 Chapter 27	1 Samuel 20:5	Part 1 Chapter 31
1 Samuel 13:14	Part 1 Chapter 21	1 Samuel 21:2 [21:1]	Part 2 Chapter 28
1 Samuel 14:44	Part 1 Chapter 11	"	Part 1 Chapter 45
1 Samuel 15:22	Part 1 Chapter 45	"	Part 1 Chapter 45
1 Samuel 15:28	Part 1 Chapter 21	1 Samuel 22:16	Part 1 Chapter 11
1 Samuel 16:1	Part 2 Chapter 68	1 Samuel 22:20	Part 1 Chapter 45
1 Samuel 16:13	Part 2 Chapter 68	1 Samuel 25:29	Part 1 Chapter 18

2 Samuel

2 Samuel 5:17	Part 2 Chapter 68	2 Samuel 8:1	Part 2 Chapter 68
2 Samuel 5:4	Part 2 Chapter 67	2 Samuel 12:10	Part 1 Chapter 26
2 Samuel 7:14	Part 2 Chapter 95	2 Samuel 21:17	Part 1 Chapter 40
2 Samuel 7:26	Part 1 Chapter 26		

1 Kings

1 Kings 2:26	Part 1 Chapter 21	1 Kings 9:13	Part 1 Chapter 6
1 Kings 2:37	Part 1 Chapter 11	1 Kings 12:16	Part 1 Chapter 6
1 Kings 8:9	Part 1 Chapter 24	1 Kings 18:21	Part 1 Chapter 39

2 Kings

2 Kings 4:23	Part 1 Chapter 31	2 Kings 17:20	Part 1 Chapter 27
2 Kings 8:10	Part 1 Chapter 11	"	Part 1 Chapter 27
2 Kings 15:29-30	Part 1 Chapter 21	2 Kings 19:20	Part 1 Chapter 25
2 Kings 16:9	Part 1 Chapter 21		

Isaiah

Isaiah 1:5-6	Part 1 Chapter 22	Isaiah 45:15	Part 1 Chapter 44
Isaiah 1:14	Part 1 Chapter 30	Isaiah 45:17	Part 1 Chapter 18
Isaiah 1:15-16	Part 1 Chapter 27	"	Part 1 Chapter 18

Isaiah 1:25-26	Part 1 Chapter 27	Isaiah 45:23	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 2:2	Part 1 Chapter 24	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
Isaiah 2:3	Part 1 Chapter 20	Isaiah 47:5-6	Part 1 Chapter 46
Isaiah 2:4	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 48:9-11	Part 1 Chapter 27
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 48:11	Part 1 Chapter 23
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 49:19	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 49:23	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 20	Isaiah 49:26	Part 1 Chapter 46
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	Isaiah 51:2	Part 1 Chapter 13
"	Part 2 Chapter 13	Isaiah 51:22	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 2:7	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 51:4	Part 1 Chapter 20
Isaiah 2:18	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 51:6	Part 1 Chapter 42
"	Part 1 Chapter 4	Isaiah 52:1	Part 1 Chapter 21
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 4:3	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
Isaiah 6:10	Part 1 Chapter 18	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
Isaiah 7:2	Part 1 Chapter 21	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
Isaiah 7:14	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 52:12	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 45	Isaiah 52:13	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 2 Chapter 2	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 2 Chapter 3	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 7:15	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 52:14	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 8:1	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 52:15	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 8:3	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 53:1	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 8:8	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 53:3	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 8:14	Part 1 Chapter 45	Isaiah 53:4	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 2 Chapter 79	Isaiah 53:4-5	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 8:23 [9:1]	Part 2 Chapter 8	Isaiah 53:5	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:1 [9:2]	Part 2 Chapter 8	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:2 [9:3]	Part 2 Chapter 8	Isaiah 53:6	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:3 [9:4]	Part 2 Chapter 8	Isaiah 53:7	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:4 [9:5]	Part 2 Chapter 8	Isaiah 53:8	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:5 [9:6]	Part 2 Chapter 8	Isaiah 53:9	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 9:6 [Isaiah 9:7]	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 53:10	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 21	Isaiah 53:11	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 11:4-5	Part 1 Chapter 42	Isaiah 53:12	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 11:6-9	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 54:1	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 11:9	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 35
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Isaiah 54:2	Part 1 Chapter 35
Isaiah 11:12	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 54:4	Part 1 Chapter 21
"	Part 1 Chapter 37	Isaiah 54:5	Part 1 Chapter 44
Isaiah 11:15-16	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 54:9-10	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 12:6	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 27
Isaiah 14:1	Part 1 Chapter 13	Isaiah 56:6	Part 1 Chapter 13
"	Part 1 Chapter 19	Isaiah 55:6-7	Part 1 Chapter 32
"	Part 1 Chapter 22	"	Part 1 Chapter 24

Isaiah 19:1	Part 1 Chapter 41	Isaiah 56:7	Part 1 Chapter 13
Isaiah 19:4	Part 1 Chapter 9	Isaiah 57:18	Part 1 Chapter 18
Isaiah 21:13	Part 1 Chapter 35	Isaiah 58:8	Part 1 Chapter 18
Isaiah 22:3	Part 1 Chapter 17	"	Part 1 Chapter 18
Isaiah 25:8	Part 2 Chapter 87	Isaiah 59:20	Part 2 Chapter 81
Isaiah 26:19	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 60:3	Part 1 Chapter 13
Isaiah 27:13	Part 1 Chapter 7	Isaiah 60:8	Part 1 Chapter 41
Isaiah 28:16	Part 1 Chapter 45	Isaiah 60:10	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 2 Chapter 79	"	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 30:26	Part 1 Chapter 22	Isaiah 60:11	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 32:14	Part 1 Chapter 26	Isaiah 60:12	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 34:1-2	Part 1 Chapter 37	"	Part 1 Chapter 41
Isaiah 34:8	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 60:17	Part 1 Chapter 35
Isaiah 37:23	Part 1 Chapter 41	Isaiah 60:21	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 37:35	Part 1 Chapter 16	"	Part 1 Chapter 41
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Isaiah 38:10	Part 1 Chapter 11	Isaiah 61:1-2	Part 2 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 11	Isaiah 61:3	Part 1 Chapter 42
Isaiah 40:8	Part 2 Chapter 97	Isaiah 61:5	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 40:18	Part 1 Chapter 10	Isaiah 61:6	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 10	Isaiah 61:7	Part 1 Chapter 35
Isaiah 41:8-9	Part 1 Chapter 22	Isaiah 62:8-9	Part 1 Chapter 27
Isaiah 41:11-12	Part 1 Chapter 46	Isaiah 62:12	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 41:14	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 41
Isaiah 42:1	Part 1 Chapter 20	Isaiah 64:5 [64:6]	Part 1 Chapter 23
Isaiah 42:2	Part 1 Chapter 35	Isaiah 65:6	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 42:17	Part 1 Chapter 6	Isaiah 65:16	Part 1 Chapter 1
Isaiah 43:5-6	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 43:11	Part 1 Chapter 10	Isaiah 65:19	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 43:19	Part 1 Chapter 33	Isaiah 65:19-22	Part 1 Chapter 1
Isaiah 43:25	Part 1 Chapter 23	Isaiah 65:25	Part 1 Chapter 1
Isaiah 44:6	Part 1 Chapter 9	Isaiah 66:17	Part 1 Chapter 44
"	Part 1 Chapter 10	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 44	Isaiah 66:20	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 44:8	Part 1 Chapter 9	"	Part 1 Chapter 26
Isaiah 44:21	Part 1 Chapter 22	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
Isaiah 44:22	Part 1 Chapter 27	Isaiah 66:22	Part 1 Chapter 7
Isaiah 45:1	Part 1 Chapter 42	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Isaiah 45:4	Part 1 Chapter 22	Isaiah 66:23	Part 1 Chapter 6
Isaiah 45:5	Part 1 Chapter 10	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
Isaiah 45:6	Part 1 Chapter 10	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
Isaiah 45:7	Part 1 Chapter 10	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
Isaiah 45:15	Part 1 Chapter 25		
Jeremiah			
Jeremiah 2:3	Part 1 Chapter 6	Jeremiah 30:7	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 46	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Jeremiah 2:16	Part 1 Chapter 33	Jeremiah 30:8	Part 1 Chapter 26
Jeremiah 3:14	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 30:9	Part 1 Chapter 6

Jeremiah 3:16	Part 1 Chapter 24	Jeremiah 30:10	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 3:17	Part 1 Chapter 1	Jeremiah 30:11	Part 1 Chapter 7
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 3:23	Part 1 Chapter 25	Jeremiah 30:12	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 4:13	Part 1 Chapter 41	Jeremiah 30:16	Part 1 Chapter 46
Jeremiah 5:18	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 30:17	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 7:15	Part 1 Chapter 28	Jeremiah 30:18	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 7:15-16	Part 1 Chapter 27	"	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 7:17-18	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 30:21	Part 1 Chapter 23
Jeremiah 7:22-23	Part 1 Chapter 45	Jeremiah 31:15	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 10:6	Part 1 Chapter 10	"	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 10:19	Part 1 Chapter 22	"	Part 1 Chapter 45
Jeremiah 10:20	Part 1 Chapter 22	Jeremiah 31:16	Part 1 Chapter 45
Jeremiah 11:11	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:16-17	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 11:13	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:16-17	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 11:14	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:17	Part 1 Chapter 45
Jeremiah 11:16	Part 1 Chapter 33	"	Part 2 Chapter 5
Jeremiah 12:15	Part 1 Chapter 21	Jeremiah 31:18	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 14:7	Part 1 Chapter 23	Jeremiah 31:19	Part 1 Chapter 21
"	Part 1 Chapter 25	Jeremiah 31:20	Part 1 Chapter 28
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:21	Part 1 Chapter 28
Jeremiah 14:8	Part 1 Chapter 25	Jeremiah 31:31	Part 1 Chapter 29
Jeremiah 14:11-12	Part 1 Chapter 27	"	Part 2 Chapter 97
Jeremiah 14:15	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:32	Part 1 Chapter 29
Jeremiah 14:21	Part 1 Chapter 23	Jeremiah 31:32-33	Part 1 Chapter 29
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:34	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 14:22	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
Jeremiah 15:1	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:35-37	Part 1 Chapter 27
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:37	Part 1 Chapter 23
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 31:38	Part 1 Chapter 35
Jeremiah 16:19-20	Part 1 Chapter 22	Jeremiah 32:41	Part 1 Chapter 27
Jeremiah 17:4	Part 1 Chapter 26	Jeremiah 33:6-8	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 17:5	Part 2 Chapter 12	Jeremiah 33:8	Part 1 Chapter 31
Jeremiah 17:13	Part 1 Chapter 25	Jeremiah 33:16	Part 1 Chapter 21
Jeremiah 17:18	Part 1 Chapter 35	Jeremiah 33:20	Part 1 Chapter 16
Jeremiah 18:7	Part 1 Chapter 27	Jeremiah 35:19	Part 1 Chapter 22
Jeremiah 23:5	Part 1 Chapter 42	Jeremiah 43:7	Part 1 Chapter 6
Jeremiah 23:6	Part 1 Chapter 28	Jeremiah 50:17	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 42	Jeremiah 50:20	Part 1 Chapter 6
Jeremiah 29:7	Part 1 Chapter 22	"	Part 1 Chapter 31
Jeremiah 29:10	Part 1 Chapter 42	Jeremiah 50:29	Part 1 Chapter 41
Ezekiel			
Ezekiel 5:7	Part 1 Chapter 38	Ezekiel 36:37	Part 1 Chapter 22
Ezekiel 11:12	Part 1 Chapter 38	Ezekiel 37:16	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 16:60	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 37:19	Part 1 Chapter 28
Ezekiel 16:62-63	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 37:23	Part 1 Chapter 1
Ezekiel 18:19	Part 1 Chapter 11	Ezekiel 37:23-24	Part 1 Chapter 6

Ezekiel 18:20	Part 1 Chapter 11	Ezekiel 37:25	Part 1 Chapter 21
"	Part 1 Chapter 11	Ezekiel 37:26-28	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 18:21	Part 1 Chapter 18	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 38:8	Part 1 Chapter 1
Ezekiel 20:11	Part 1 Chapter 18	Ezekiel 38:19-20	Part 1 Chapter 34
Ezekiel 20:44	Part 1 Chapter 23	Ezekiel 38:22	Part 1 Chapter 22
Ezekiel 22:15	Part 1 Chapter 6	Ezekiel 39:10	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 7	Ezekiel 39:25	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 39:28	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 42	Ezekiel 39:28-29	Part 1 Chapter 26
Ezekiel 28	Part 1 Chapter 35	Ezekiel 39:29	Part 1 Chapter 1
Ezekiel 28:9	Part 1 Chapter 47	"	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 28:19	Part 1 Chapter 22	Ezekiel 39:9	Part 1 Chapter 1
Ezekiel 33:11	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 40	Part 1 Chapter 35
Ezekiel 34:25	Part 1 Chapter 6	Ezekiel 40 to 45	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Ezekiel 43:4-7	Part 1 Chapter 34
Ezekiel 34:28	Part 1 Chapter 1	Ezekiel 43:7	Part 1 Chapter 1
Ezekiel 36:7-12	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 43:9	Part 1 Chapter 33
Ezekiel 36:22	Part 1 Chapter 23	Ezekiel 44:9	Part 1 Chapter 21
Ezekiel 36:22-28	Part 1 Chapter 27	Ezekiel 44:15	Part 1 Chapter 21
Ezekiel 36:25	Part 1 Chapter 1	Ezekiel 47:1	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 36:25-26	Part 1 Chapter 6	Ezekiel 47:12	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 36:26	Part 1 Chapter 7	Ezekiel 47:13	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezekiel 36:27	Part 1 Chapter 7	Ezekiel 48:35	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 36	"	Part 1 Chapter 21

Hosea

Hosea 1:9	Part 2 Chapter 78	Hosea 3:5	Part 1 Chapter 1
Hosea 2:1 [1:10]	Part 2 Chapter 68	Hosea 4:17	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 2 Chapter 78	Hosea 6:1	Part 1 Chapter 22
Hosea 2:2 [1:11]	Part 1 Chapter 33	Hosea 11:1	Part 1 Chapter 45
Hosea 2:13 [2:11]	Part 1 Chapter 30	"	Part 2 Chapter 4
Hosea 2:20 [2:18]	Part 1 Chapter 1	Hosea 13:11	Part 1 Chapter 14
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Hosea 13:14	Part 2 Chapter 87
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	Hosea 13:4	Part 1 Chapter 10
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	"	Part 1 Chapter 25
Hosea 3:4	Part 1 Chapter 6	Hosea 14:2-3 [14:1-2]	Part 1 Chapter 27

Joel

Joel 2:27	Part 1 Chapter 1	Joel 3:21	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	Joel 4:2 [3:2]	Part 1 Chapter 46
Joel 2:27-28	Part 2 Chapter 30	Joel 4:17 [3:17]	Part 1 Chapter 24
Joel 3:1 [2:28]	Part 1 Chapter 42	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Joel 4:19 [3:19]	Part 1 Chapter 6
Joel 3:17	Part 1 Chapter 1	"	Part 1 Chapter 46
Joel 3:18	Part 1 Chapter 6		

Amos

Amos 1:5	Part 1 Chapter 21	Amos 5:3	Part 1 Chapter 32
Amos 1:6	Part 1 Chapter 6	Amos 5:4	Part 1 Chapter 32
Amos 1:9	Part 1 Chapter 6	Amos 5:12	Part 1 Chapter 31
Amos 2:6	Part 1 Chapter 31	Amos 5:26-27	Part 2 Chapter 64
Amos 3:2	Part 1 Chapter 22	Amos 6:2	Part 1 Chapter 35
Amos 3:7	Part 1 Chapter 10	Amos 7:11	Part 1 Chapter 21
Amos 4:6	Part 1 Chapter 32	Amos 8:4	Part 1 Chapter 31
Amos 4:12	Part 1 Chapter 32	Amos 8:9	Part 1 Chapter 42
Amos 4:13	Part 1 Chapter 32	Amos 9:12	Part 2 Chapter 71
Amos 5:1	Part 1 Chapter 32	Amos 9:14-15	Part 1 Chapter 32
Amos 5:2	Part 1 Chapter 32		

Obadiah

Obadiah 1:10	Part 1 Chapter 46	Obadiah 1:21	Part 1 Chapter 6
Obadiah 1:18	Part 1 Chapter 6		

Jonah

Jonah 4:3	Part 1 Chapter 11
-----------	-----------------------------------

Micah

Micah 4:2	Part 1 Chapter 22	Micah 5:3 [5:4]	Part 1 Chapter 33
Micah 4:3	Part 2 Chapter 13	Micah 5:4 [5:5]	Part 1 Chapter 33
Micah 4:4	Part 1 Chapter 33	Micah 5:5-6 [5:6-7]	Part 1 Chapter 33
Micah 4:14 [5:1]	Part 1 Chapter 33	Micah 5:6 [5:7]	Part 1 Chapter 33
Micah 5:2 [5:3]	Part 1 Chapter 33	Micah 5:8 [5:9]	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 33	Micah 5:9 [5:10]	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 33	Micah 7:10	Part 1 Chapter 22
Micah 5:3 [5:4]	Part 1 Chapter 33		

Nahum

(no verses)

Habakkuk

(no verses)

Zephaniah

Zephaniah 2:9-10	Part 1 Chapter 46	Zephaniah 3:9	Part 2 Chapter 49
Zephaniah 2:11	Part 1 Chapter 4	Zephaniah 3:13	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Zephaniah 3:19	Part 1 Chapter 46
Zephaniah 3:9	Part 1 Chapter 44		

Haggai

Haggai 2:6	Part 1 Chapter 34	Haggai 2:21-22	Part 1 Chapter 34
Haggai 2:9	Part 1 Chapter 34	Haggai 2:23	Part 1 Chapter 34
"	Part 1 Chapter 34		

Zechariah

Zechariah 1:3	Part 1 Chapter 27	Zechariah 9:12	Part 1 Chapter 35
Zechariah 1:15	Part 1 Chapter 46	Zechariah 9:13	Part 1 Chapter 33
Zechariah 2:4	Part 1 Chapter 33	"	Part 1 Chapter 35
Zechariah 2:5	Part 1 Chapter 34	Zechariah 10:8	Part 1 Chapter 22
Zechariah 2:9 [2:5]	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 10:10	Part 1 Chapter 22
Zechariah 2:12-13 [8-9]	Part 1 Chapter 46	Zechariah 11:7	Part 2 Chapter 25
Zechariah 2:14	Part 1 Chapter 1	Zechariah 11:12-13	Part 2 Chapter 25
Zechariah 2:15 [2:11]	Part 1 Chapter 13	Zechariah 12:2	Part 1 Chapter 36
Zechariah 3:7	Part 1 Chapter 18	Zechariah 12:3	Part 1 Chapter 36
Zechariah 8:4	Part 1 Chapter 22	Zechariah 12:4	Part 1 Chapter 36
Zechariah 8:23	Part 1 Chapter 13	Zechariah 12:5	Part 1 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 22	Zechariah 12:6	Part 1 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 12:7	Part 1 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 12:8	Part 1 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 44	Zechariah 12:9-10	Part 1 Chapter 36
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Zechariah 12:10	Part 1 Chapter 36
Zechariah 9:1	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 13:2	Part 1 Chapter 4
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
Zechariah 9:2	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 13:7	Part 1 Chapter 37
Zechariah 9:3	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 13:9	Part 1 Chapter 33
Zechariah 9:4	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:2	Part 1 Chapter 33
Zechariah 9:5	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:4	Part 1 Chapter 6
Zechariah 9:6	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:7	Part 1 Chapter 42
Zechariah 9:7	Part 1 Chapter 15	Zechariah 14:8	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 44	Zechariah 14:9	Part 1 Chapter 6
Zechariah 9:8	Part 1 Chapter 35	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
Zechariah 9:9	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:12	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:14	Part 1 Chapter 22
Zechariah 9:10	Part 1 Chapter 35	Zechariah 14:16	Part 1 Chapter 30
"	Part 2 Chapter 13	"	Part 1 Chapter 44
"	Part 2 Chapter 21	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Zechariah 14:17	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Zechariah 34:9	Part 1 Chapter 4
Zechariah 9:11	Part 1 Chapter 35		

Malachi

Malachi 1:11	Part 1 Chapter 38	Malachi 3:7	Part 1 Chapter 27
Malachi 1:12	Part 1 Chapter 38	Malachi 3:22 [4:4]	Part 1 Chapter 19
Malachi 1:13	Part 1 Chapter 38	"	Part 1 Chapter 24
Malachi 3:3	Part 1 Chapter 38	Malachi 3:23 [4:5]	Part 1 Chapter 39
Malachi 3:4	Part 1 Chapter 38		

Psalms

Psalms 2:6	Part 2 Chapter 68	Psalms 79:1	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalms 2:7	Part 1 Chapter 40	Psalms 79:9	Part 1 Chapter 23
"	Part 2 Chapter 95	Psalms 80:4 [80:3]	Part 1 Chapter 23
Psalms 2:8	Part 2 Chapter 68	Psalms 82:1	Part 2 Chapter 51

Psalm 7:16 [7:15]	Part 2 Chapter 69	Psalm 82:6	Part 2 Chapter 51
Psalm 8:4-7 [8:3-6]	Part 2 Chapter 96	Psalm 83:2 [83:1]	Part 1 Chapter 46
Psalm 16:10-11	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 85:9	Part 1 Chapter 34
Psalm 19:8 [19:7]	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 86:9	Part 1 Chapter 44
Psalm 19:8-10 [19:7-9]	Part 1 Chapter 19	Psalm 86:10	Part 1 Chapter 10
Psalm 19:12	Part 1 Chapter 4	Psalm 90:4	Part 1 Chapter 7
Psalm 20:2 [20:1]	Part 1 Chapter 40	Psalm 94:13	Part 2 Chapter 69
Psalm 24:1	Part 2 Chapter 12	Psalm 95:11	Part 1 Chapter 35
Psalm 25:11	Part 1 Chapter 23	Psalm 96:1	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 25:12-13	Part 1 Chapter 18	"	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 26:9	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 96:3	Part 1 Chapter 22
Psalm 27:13	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 97:1	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 31:20 [31:19]	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 97:7	Part 1 Chapter 6
Psalm 36:8-10 [36:7-9]	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 97:7	Part 2 Chapter 95
Psalm 40:7 [40:6]	Part 1 Chapter 45	Psalm 101:5	Part 1 Chapter 16
"	Part 2 Chapter 98	Psalm 110:1	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 40:9 [40:8]	Part 1 Chapter 47	Psalm 111:7-8	Part 2 Chapter 97
Psalm 41:5 [41:4]	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 113:3	Part 1 Chapter 38
Psalm 44:12 [44:11]	Part 1 Chapter 22	Psalm 115:1	Part 1 Chapter 23
Psalm 44:22	Part 1 Chapter 7	Psalm 115:4-9	Part 1 Chapter 38
Psalm 44:23 [44:22]	Part 1 Chapter 22	Psalm 116:8-9	Part 1 Chapter 18
Psalm 44:27 [44:26]	Part 1 Chapter 23	Psalm 118:16	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 45:7 [45:6]	Part 2 Chapter 95	Psalm 119:44	Part 1 Chapter 19
Psalm 45:8 [45:7]	Part 2 Chapter 95	Psalm 130:8	Part 1 Chapter 31
Psalm 49:16 [49:15]	Part 1 Chapter 11	Psalm 135:4	Part 1 Chapter 22
"	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 135:15-18	Part 1 Chapter 38
Psalm 50:22	Part 1 Chapter 9	Psalm 136:22	Part 1 Chapter 22
Psalm 65:5 [65:4]	Part 1 Chapter 23	Psalm 137:1	Part 1 Chapter 40
Psalm 67:2 [67:1]	Part 1 Chapter 13	Psalm 139:8	Part 1 Chapter 11
Psalm 68:19 [68:18]	Part 2 Chapter 91	Psalm 143:10	Part 1 Chapter 47
Psalm 72:7	Part 1 Chapter 42	Psalm 143:11	Part 1 Chapter 23
Psalm 72:11	Part 2 Chapter 21	Psalm 144:8	Part 1 Chapter 40
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Psalm 146:3	Part 2 Chapter 12
Psalm 73:25	Part 1 Chapter 18	Psalm 147:19-20	Part 1 Chapter 6
Psalm 74:1	Part 1 Chapter 40	Psalm 148:6	Part 1 Chapter 19

Proverbs

Proverbs 1:8	Part 1 Chapter 20	Proverbs 23:17-18	Part 1 Chapter 18
Proverbs 3:1	Part 1 Chapter 20	Proverbs 24:14	Part 1 Chapter 18
Proverbs 3:12	Part 1 Chapter 5	Proverbs 24:17	Part 2 Chapter 11
"	Part 1 Chapter 22	Proverbs 25:21	Part 1 Chapter 45
Proverbs 3:16	Part 1 Chapter 34	"	Part 2 Chapter 11
Proverbs 11:7	Part 1 Chapter 18	Proverbs 26:27	Part 2 Chapter 69
Proverbs 14:32	Part 1 Chapter 18	Proverbs 30:17	Part 1 Chapter 14

Job

Job 5:16	Part 1 Chapter 22	Job 18:2	Part 1 Chapter 10
Job 10:7	Part 1 Chapter 40	Job 33:16	Part 1 Chapter 42

Job 11:8	Part 1 Chapter 11	Job 33:30	Part 1 Chapter 18
Job 14:13	Part 1 Chapter 11		

Ruth

Ruth 2:5	Part 1 Chapter 21		
----------	-----------------------------------	--	--

Lamentations

Lamentations 1:1	Part 1 Chapter 40	Lamentations 4:22	Part 1 Chapter 27
Lamentations 2:6	Part 1 Chapter 30	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Lamentations 2:13	Part 1 Chapter 22	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Lamentations 4:22	Part 1 Chapter 6	Lamentations 5:7	Part 1 Chapter 11
"	Part 1 Chapter 6	Lamentations 5:21	Part 1 Chapter 23
"	Part 1 Chapter 7		

Ecclesiastes

Ecclesiastes 2:8	Part 1 Chapter 18	Ecclesiastes 9:10	Part 1 Chapter 11
Ecclesiastes 3:21	Part 1 Chapter 18	Ecclesiastes 12:7	Part 1 Chapter 11
Ecclesiastes 4:8	Part 1 Chapter 21	"	Part 1 Chapter 18
Ecclesiastes 7:20	Part 1 Chapter 27		

Esther

Esther 8:16	Part 2 Chapter 8		
-------------	----------------------------------	--	--

Daniel

Daniel 2:28	Part 1 Chapter 1	Daniel 7:27	Part 2 Chapter 21
Daniel 2:34	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 2 Chapter 49
Daniel 2:44	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 1
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 7:28	Part 1 Chapter 42
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 8:13-26	Part 1 Chapter 42
"	Part 2 Chapter 49	Daniel 8:14	Part 1 Chapter 42
"	Part 2 Chapter 95	Daniel 8:24	Part 1 Chapter 41
"	Part 1 Chapter 1	Daniel 9:18-19	Part 1 Chapter 23
Daniel 7:13	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 9:24	Part 1 Chapter 42
Daniel 7:18	Part 1 Chapter 6	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Daniel 7:21-22	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 9:25	Part 1 Chapter 6
Daniel 7:25	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 42
Daniel 7:26-27	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 9:26	Part 1 Chapter 42
Daniel 7:27	Part 1 Chapter 6	Daniel 12:1	Part 1 Chapter 33
"	Part 1 Chapter 35	Daniel 12:2	Part 1 Chapter 6
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	"	Part 1 Chapter 18
"	Part 1 Chapter 41	Daniel 12:7	Part 1 Chapter 41

Ezra

Ezra 1:11	Part 1 Chapter 6	Ezra 9:9	Part 1 Chapter 6
Ezra 2:1	Part 1 Chapter 6	Ezra 10:11	Part 1 Chapter 47

Nehemiah

Nehemiah 4:2	Part 1 Chapter 6	Nehemiah 9:36	Part 1 Chapter 17
--------------	----------------------------------	---------------	-----------------------------------

Nehemiah 7:3
Nehemiah 9:6

[Part 1 Chapter 6](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 10](#)

Nehemiah 9:36-37

[Part 1 Chapter 6](#)

1 Chronicles

1 Chronicles 3
1 Chronicles 3:11
1 Chronicles 5:2
1 Chronicles 17:20

[Part 2 Chapter 1](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 45](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 14](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 10](#)

1 Chronicles 17:24
1 Chronicles 28:4
1 Chronicles 29:22
1 Chronicles 29:23

[Part 1 Chapter 26](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 14](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 21](#)
[Part 2 Chapter 95](#)

2 Chronicles

2 Chronicles 21:12
2 Chronicles 24:20

[Part 1 Chapter 39](#)
[Part 2 Chapter 22](#)

2 Chronicles 36:20
2 Chronicles 36:21

[Part 1 Chapter 6](#)
[Part 1 Chapter 7](#)

Notes

Our first draft is merely an electronic copy of Moses Mocatta's translation, printed in 1851, of Faith Strengthened. We have corrected the many erroneous verse references, added chapter and verse references where they were not given in the translation, created a hyper-linked index of verses and added a biography of Isaac of Troki.

Mocatta toned down Troki's original text, possibly to avoid confrontation with Christians. Our final version will be a complete retranslation of the original Hebrew text of Faith Strengthened.

Acknowledgements

This update to Isaac ben Abraham of Troki's Faith Strengthened is the result of the hard work of several members of the World Karaite Movement:

- * Dale Albertson - verse checking
- * Yahchannah Baldus - verse checking
- * Susan Douthit - verse checking
- * Devorah Gordon - typing
- * Nehemia Gordon - copyist, distribution, web host
- * Yohanan Shalom Jacobson - verse checking
- * Ivan Labombarbe - verse checking
- * Nava Rose - typing, proofing, verse checking
- * Johannah Stern - typing
- * Nancy (Last name unknown) - proofing

Non-members who also helped:

- * Tim Shemayah Philips - scanning
- * Robert Sewell - typing, proofing, verse checking, HTML coding, verse index, webmaster

Part I – Refutations of Christianity’s Claims and Objections to Judaism

Chapter Refutations of the Following Christian Claims and Objections

Preface

- 1 Why Jews do not believe that Jesus was Messiah
- 2 God’s alleged rejection of Israel and the Jews
- 3 Israel’s rejection of Jesus left them without a king
- 4 Rabbi Gamaliel’s “prophecy” regarding the church
- 5 Gentiles rule over Jews because of the Jews’ sins
- 6 No prophecy for current exile proves Jesus is Messiah
- 7 No prophecy for current exile proves curse of Lev 26:38
- 8 Jews cannot receive tribal inheritance because of lost genealogy
- 9 Plurality of Elohim proves doctrine of the Trinity (Gen 1:1)
- 10 Plurality of Elohim proves doctrine of the Trinity (Gen 1:26)
- 11 Adam’s fall and Original Sin
- 12 "Prophetic proof" of Jesus’ victory over Satan (Gen 3:15)
- 13 Jesus is Abraham’s seed which blesses the nations (Gen 22:18)
- 14 Prophecy of the scepter fulfilled in Jesus (Gen 49:10)
- 15 Jesus argues against kashrut (Matt. 15:11)
- 16 Jews cursed because they cannot keep Torah perfectly (Deut 27:26)
- 17 Israel to have no restoration from current exile (Lev 26:42)
- 18 Torah concerns physical life only, not spiritual life nor afterlife
- 19 Torah was temporary, abrogated by Jesus’ new law
- 20 Jesus gave a new law, prophesied by Isaiah 2:3 and Isaiah 51:4
- 21 Isaiah’s prophecy of the virgin birth (Isaiah 7:14)
- 22 Jesus, the suffering servant (Isaiah 52-53)
- 23 Man, unable to keep all the laws of Moses, cannot earn salvation (Isaiah 64:5)
- 24 Annulment of the laws of Moses prophesied (Jeremiah 3:16)
- 25 Jesus, the Divine Savior, living among men prophesied (Jeremiah 14:8)
- 26 An everlasting captivity for the Jews without redemption prophesied (Jer 17:4)
- 27 God’s promises to the Jews were conditional (Jeremiah 18:7)
- 28 Herod’s slaying of the children of Bethlehem foretold (Jeremiah 31:15)
- 29 New covenant prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31 fulfilled in Gospel of Jesus
- 30 The Jewish feasts, new moons and Sabbaths revoked by Jesus (Hosea 2:11)
- 31 Judas’ betrayal of Jesus for 30 pieces of silver foretold (Amos 2:6)
- 32 An everlasting captivity for the Jews without redemption prophesied (Amos 5:2)
- 33 Messiah to be born in Bethlehem, hence must be Jesus (Micah 5:2)
- 34 Jesus alleged to be the glory of the latter house (Haggai 2:9)
- 35 Entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem on donkey foretold (Zechariah 9:9)
- 36 Prophecy of the Messiah being pierced and slain (Zechariah 12:10)
- 37 Prophecy that Jesus would be smitten and his flock scattered (Zechariah 13:7)
- 38 Widespread acceptance of Christianity foretold (Malachi 1:11)
- 39 John the Baptist the new Elijah who proceeds the Messiah (Malachi 3:23-24)
- 40 David spoke of Jesus sitting at the right hand of God (Psalms 110:1)
- 41 Jesus 2nd advent foretold (Daniel 7:13)
- 42 Foretelling of Jesus being cut off childless after 70 weeks (Daniel 9:26)
- 43 The matter of the Christian Apocryphal books briefly dealt with
- 44 Messiah brings one faith & one creed - Judaism (Isaiah 45:23, Zephaniah 3:9)
- 45 Passages from TN”K quoted in the Christian Testament are not applicable
- 46 Divine chastisement of Gentile nations who persecute the Jews
- 47 Was Jesus crucified with his will or against his will?
- 48 A challenge to the doctrine that Jesus’ blood could save Christians from hell
- 49 Myriad inconsistencies between Christian doctrines and the teachings of Jesus
- 50 Doctrinal additions to the NT, in spite of their scripture condemning such

Part II – Refutations of Christianity’s Claims and Objections to Judaism

Chapter Refutations of the Following Christian Claims and Objections

Preface

- 1 The genealogies of Jesus according to Matthew and Luke compared
- 2 The virgin birth
- 3 Mary not a virgin after the birth of Jesus, Jesus not called Emmanuel
- 4 Matthew’s misapplication of Hosea 11:1
- 5 Matthew’s errant use of Jeremiah’s prophecy (31:15) of Rachel weeping
- 6 Matthew’s invention of the prophecy of Messiah being from Nazareth
- 7 The temptation of Jesus
- 8 Jesus dwelt in Capernaum, said to be foretold by Isaiah 9
- 9 Fishers of men is bad metaphor (but is appropriate for Christianity)
- 10 Doctrine that the law of Moses was superceded by Jesus contradicts Jesus
- 11 Matthew’s imaginary commandment of Moses to “hate thy neighbor” refuted
- 12 Doctrine of the divinity of Jesus examined
- 13 Jesus claimed to bring strife, not peace, opposing prophecies of Messiah’s peace
- 14 Using the reasoning that defends the trinity, it and the apostles are a unity
- 15 Jesus’ claim that John the Baptist was Elijah refuted
- 16 A proof by Jesus himself against the trinity doctrine (Matt. 12:32, Luke 12:10)
- 17 Another challenge to Mary’s virginity from Matthew 13:55, Mark 6:3
- 18 Jesus teaches against kosher laws of Moses (Matthew 15:1-25, Mark 7:1-24)
- 19 A 2nd proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (Matthew 19:16, Mark 10:21)
- 20 A 3rd proof against the trinity doctrine by Jesus (Matthew 20:23, Mark 10)
- 21 Jesus, because of his self-declared status as servant, is not divine (Matt. 20:28)
- 22 Error regarding death of Zacharius prove non-divine inspiration (Matt. 23:35)
- 23 Disagreement in stories of Jesus’ anointment of oil prove non-divine inspiration
- 24 Jesus and God aren’t one, especially in will, shown by passion story prayer
- 25 Misapplication of the passage re: 30 pieces of silver examined (Matt. 27:9-10)
- 26 A 4th proof against the trinity doctrine by Jesus (Matt 27:46, Mark 15:34)
- 27 Another proof against the divinity of Jesus from Matthew 28:18)
- 28 Misrepresentation of the passage regarding David eating the shewbread
- 29 Mutual discord between Jesus and his family
- 30 Examination of Jesus’ cursing of the fig tree (Mark 11:11-13, Matthew 21:18)
- 31 A 5th proof against the trinity doctrine (Mark 13:32)
- 32 Inconsistencies in the gospels concerning Mary’s disbelief and her revelation
- 33 (?) Perceived as inapplicable by the translator, Moses Mocatta, so not included
- 34 The gospels’ own refutation of the miraculous birth of Jesus
- 35 Examination of the incorrect and inconsistent accounts of the genealogy of Jesus
- 36 Non-fulfillment of Isaiah 61 in Jesus, who said he fulfilled it (Luke 4:17-21)
- 37 Jesus and Paul shown not to practice what they preach re: turning the cheek
- 38 One example of illogical replies made by Jesus (Luke 9:37-41)
- 39 Examination of the alleged salvation of Jesus in light of poor Lazarus
- 40 God apparently did not accept Jesus’ prayer to forgive the Jews
- 41 John the Baptist denies being Elijah (John 1:21) in contradiction to Jesus
- 42 Another proof against Mary’s continued state of virginity after Jesus’ birth
- 43 Jesus’ unreasonable answer to a request for a sign from the Jews (John 2:18-20)
- 44 A 6th proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (John 6:38)
- 45 Jesus own brothers did not believe in him, why should we?
- 46 Tradition of Jesus’ teacher exposed in Talmud, against John’s assertion
- 47 The adulterous woman given a lax sentence goes against Torah
- 48 A 7th proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (John 8:40)
- 49 Union of faith not accomplished by Jesus as claimed in John 10:16

-
- 50 Refutation of Jesus' claim (John 10:30) that he and God are one
 - 51 Jesus uses a psalm that admonishes his claim to be Son of God
 - 52 Jesus' examples of unity contradict the Trinity concept or include the apostles
 - 53 Jesus claims all power and knowledge from God, yet admits lack of same
 - 54 Jesus gives a commandment of Moses, but says it is a new commandment
 - 55 Jesus admits to being only God's messenger, not God Himself
 - 56 Account of Judas' betrayal differs in John from Synoptics
 - 57 The claim that the Jews lost Israel because they killed Jesus contradicted in NT
 - 58 Jesus again admits to not being God
 - 59 Jesus shows he didn't consider himself to be the restorer of the kingdom
 - 60 The duration of a religion does not prove the veracity of its tenets
 - 61 The New Testament's error in the chronology of Abraham's migrations
 - 62 An example that Jesus' disciples were superficially versed in Scripture
 - 63 Six more examples that Jesus' disciples were superficially versed in Scripture
 - 64 The apostles misquote Amos
 - 65 The irony of modern disbelief in sorcery in conjunction with stories of same in NT
 - 66 Inconsistencies in Christian text regarding food
 - 67 Paul's error regarding the length of King Saul's reign
 - 68 Paul's misuse of Psalm 2 to prove Jesus is the Son of God
 - 69 Paul misunderstands Psalm 16:10
 - 70 Peter contradicts Jesus regarding obedience to Torah
 - 71 James twists Amos 9:12 to say the Gentiles will acquire the Jewish inheritance
 - 72 Another inconsistency between Jesus' teachings and additional doctrines
 - 73 Paul's example of having Timothy circumcised conflicts with later doctrines
 - 74 Paul's example of having Timothy circumcised conflicts with his own teaching
 - 75 Paul's answer to "what must I do to be saved" conflicts with Jesus' answer
 - 76 Deifying humans was a common pagan practice, explaining Jesus' deification
 - 77 Paul says death reigned only until the Mosaic law, Jesus' death inconsequential
 - 78 Paul twists Hosea 1 to refer to Gentiles, when it actually refers to Israel
 - 79 Taking Hebrew scriptures out of context is its own refutation, examples given
 - 80 Words of God through Moses in Deuteronomy 30:14 misconstrued by Paul
 - 81 Isaiah 59:20 misconstrued by Paul
 - 82 Paul says Jesus' death broke Satan's power, yet also says Satan is still in power
 - 83 Paul condemns breaking Mosaic laws from which Christians are supposedly free
 - 84 Paul's great presumption that man would someday judge angels
 - 85 Another example of Paul's inconsistency regarding circumcision
 - 86 Another factual error in the allegedly perfect and inspired NT
 - 87 Another example of concatenating two unrelated verses to support a doctrine
 - 88 Paul contradicts John regarding whether or not Jesus' brother James believed
 - 89 Paul's assertion that a shameful death released Jesus' followers from God's law
 - 90 Ignorance of Hebrew language leads Paul to the wrong conclusion about "seed"
 - 91 Psalm 68 misquoted and misconstrued
 - 92 An example of Paul mentioning men first before God leads to questions
 - 93 James epistle of works completely contradicts Paul's gospel of faith alone
 - 94 Troki notes that the book of Hebrews was rejected as apocryphal by early church
 - 95 More verses from TN"K misused in Hebrew to prove Jesus is God
 - 96 The strange doctrine that Jesus was lower than, yet worshipped by the angels
 - 97 The Christian interpretation of the new covenant of Jeremiah 31:31 is in error
 - 98 Psalm 40:7 misquoted to support notion that God did not want sacrifices
 - 99 Dan is omitted from list of tribes, suggesting the biblical ignorance of author
 - 100 Changes made against Jesus' teachings prohibited by Christians' own scripture

Part I – Refutations of Christianity’s Claims and Objections to Judaism

Abstract From The Author's Preface

My religious zeal was aroused, on finding that the name of the Supreme Being was dishonored, and our Holy Law profaned, by the very people who had been appointed to be the guardians of faith and the witnesses of those grand truths which make the simple man wise, the sorrowing heart glad; and the dim eyes bright. To my grief, I found that the inquisitive and indefatigable study of religion, which yields due reward to its zealous followers, was not cultivated among us as in former days, and am persuaded that ignorance and growing misapprehensions have added mental to physical burdens. Persecutions arising from religious hatred were heaped upon the children of my faith in all quarters of the globe, and were ever increasing in acrimony, not less in consequence of the low state of knowledge possessed by the Jews in matters of theological controversy than by the confused and mistaken notions which Christians had formed of Judaism. But it is absolutely imperative on man to be at all times prepared to repel any attack made on his belief. In conformity with this observation, our sages have recorded their opinion in the following axiom: — "Man ought assiduously to study his own faith, and be competent to give a proper reply to his antagonists," more particularly when we consider that, in the majority of cases, the opposition to our doctrines rests on the misinterpretation of those Scriptures of which we alone are the legitimate heirs and expounders.

Influenced by the foregoing reflections, I have undertaken this humble work, which, in its narrow compass, embraces a subject of the utmost importance. It is intended to afford a stronghold to the sincere believer in the Sinaic revelations who may be incapable of defending himself, and whose opinions may be exposed to the persevering attacks of his assailant. I refer my co-religionist so situated, to an attentive perusal of the "FAITH STRENGTHENED," wherein he will find an ample supply of arguments and proofs in favor and support of our venerable creed. In former years, when I investigated the works of several Christian divines, and had frequent disputations with other literary Christians, I made a point to reason in a mild and dispassionate manner. Indeed, I placed my reliance on the soundness of my position, by preserving a constant evenness of temper. Thus I rendered the discussions advantageous to myself and more acceptable to my opponents. Seeing that our Holy Scriptures contain immutable truths, revealed to us for the benefit of the whole human race, I have presented in this work such biblical passages as serve to illustrate the genuineness of Judaism, and also such as require elucidation, in order that the reader may fully perceive that, whatever seems obscure or tending to support Christianity, is, indeed, merely so in form, and relates wholly and

exclusively to the sacred cause of Judaism – a cause which no argument whatever can depreciate, for the leading object of our faith is to make erring men look up to the unerring Deity, and inspire the belief that one indivisible God rules over the destinies of all, requiring no mediator or intercessor to obtain remission for our sins.

I have endeavored not merely to explain such passages of our Scriptures as are obnoxious to misconstruction, but also to arraign before the tribunal of common sense the assertions made by Christians which tend to throw discredit on the truths of the Jewish Faith. For this purpose, I found it advisable to subdivide this work into two parts. The first portion is devoted to an examination of the objections raised by Christians against our religion, and to the proofs cited by them for the corroboration of their own doctrines. The refutation I have given it, is in many cases, based on the contradictory nature of their own statements. The second portion comprises a careful review and refutation of the glaring inconsistencies that are discoverable in the New Testament. With the view to render the argument introduced into this work more cogent and conspicuous, I have allotted in the first part a separate chapter to each particular subject of discussion. In the second part, it has appeared preferable to adopt distinct chapters for those passages of the New Testament which call for a special animadversion and refutation. May the God of all Spirits, who has rendered wisdom unfathomable, and who scrutinizes all hidden thoughts, bestow a blessing on my humble efforts, forgive all my unconscious errors, uphold me in my pure faith, and grant his Divine protection to me and all Israel. Amen.

Chapter 1: Why Jews do not believe that Jesus was Messiah

I was once asked by a Christian scholar, "Why do you Jews refuse to believe that Jesus Christ was the Messiah, evidence concerning him having been given by the true prophets, in whose words you also believe?"

And this is the answer which I gave him: How is it possible for us to believe that he was the Messiah, as we do not see any actual proof of his Messiahship throughout the prophetic writings. As for the passages which the authors of the Gospel adduce from the words of the prophets, to demonstrate that Jesus the Nazarene was the Messiah, they advance nothing relating to him, as will be shown in the second part of this work, in which we shall, in regular succession, point out the fallacies set forth in the Gospel. On the other hand, we shall see many incontrovertible proofs in support of our conviction that

Jesus was by no means the Messiah. A few of these arguments may be here introduced,

He was not the Messiah is evident:—

1st, from his pedigree;

2ndly, from his acts;

3rdly, from the period in which he lived; and

4thly, from the fact that, during his existence, the promises were not fulfilled which are to be realized on the advent of the expected Messiah, whereas the fulfillment of the conditions alone can warrant a belief in the identity of the Messiah.

1st. As to the pedigree of Jesus, he was not a descendant of David, being merely affiliated to him through Joseph, as is testified in the Gospel. For in Matthew, chapter 1, it is written, that Jesus was born of Mary during her virginity, and that Joseph knew her not until she had given birth to Jesus. According to this statement, the pedigree of Joseph can be of no avail to Jesus, and at the same time it is quite evident that the ancestry of Mary was unknown to the authors of the Gospel. But even the relationship of Joseph to David is wanting in proof, there being a discrepancy between Matthew and Luke in their account of his pedigree, which appears clearly, when we compare the Gospel of Matthew, chapter 1, with that of Luke, at the end of chapter 3. Here we see conflicting testimonies; and where that is the case no belief can be attached to either statement. The prophets, on the contrary, predicted to us that the expected Messiah should be no other than a descendant of David.

2ndly. As to the works of Jesus, we find that He says of himself, Matthew 10:34, "Think not that I am come to make peace on earth; I came not to send peace but the sword, and to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law." On the other hand, we find Holy Writ attributing to the true and expected Messiah actions contrary to those of Jesus. We see here that Jesus says of himself, he is not come to make peace on earth, whereas Scripture says of the true and expected Messiah, in Zechariah 9:10, "And he shall speak peace unto the heathen," etc. Jesus says he came in order "to send the sword on earth," but Scripture says, Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruninghooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." Jesus says he came "to put father and son at variance," etc, but Malachi says (at the end of his book) that "before the coming of the true Messiah the prophet Elijah shall appear, and turn the heart of the fathers to their children, and the heart of the children to their fathers." Jesus says, concerning himself, Matthew 20:28, that he is not come to

be served by the son of man, but to serve others.

Concerning the true Messiah, however, Scripture says, Psalm 72:11, "Yea, all kings shall prostrate themselves before him; all nations shall serve him." And Zechariah 9:10, "His dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the end of the earth." Thus states also Daniel, 7:27, "And all rulers shall serve him and obey him."

3rdly. As to the period of his existence, it is evident that he did not come at the time foretold by the prophets; for they predicted the advent of the Messiah to happen at the latter days, see Isaiah 2:2, "And it shall come to pass in the latter days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established on the top of the mountains," etc. Further we read there, verse 4, concerning the king Messiah, "And he shall judge among the nations and arbitrate among many people, and they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruninghooks," etc. Thus is also recorded in Scripture concerning the wars of Gog and Magog, which are to take place in the time of the king Messiah. Vide Ezekiel 38:8, "After many days thou shalt be visited; in the latter years thou shalt come into the land that is brought back from the sword," as will be explained in the proper place. The same is evident from Hosea, 3:5, "Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the Lord their God, and David their king, and shall revere the Lord and His goodness in the latter days." So we read also in Daniel 2:28, "And (God) maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days." Which passage refers to the subsequent prophecy, *ibid* verse 44, "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the sovereignty shall not be left to other people," etc. Hence we see clearly that the prophets predicted that the coming of the true Messiah would happen at the "latter days," and not before.

4thly. We have to consider the promises contained in the words of the prophets, which were not fulfilled in the time of Jesus, but are to be realized in future at the time of the true Messiah, who is still expected. They may be classed under the following heads:-

(a.) At the time of the king Messiah there is to be only one kingdom and one king, namely, the true king Messiah. But the other empires and their rulers shall cease at that period, as we read in Daniel 2:44, "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever." Whereas, we now actually see that many empires, different in their laws and habits, are still in existence; and that in each empire a different king is ruling; consequently the Messiah is not yet come.

(b.) At the time of the king Messiah, there is to be in the world but one creed and one religion, and that is the religion of Israel, as is proved by Isaiah (52:1), "Awake, awake, put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean." And further (chapter 66:17), "Who sanctify themselves and purify themselves [we prefer the literal translation of this obscure passage to the unwarranted and still more obscure translation of the Authorised Version] in the gardens, behind one in the midst of them who eat the flesh of the swine, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together saith the Lord." And (verse 23) it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come and worship before me, saith the Lord." Moreover, it is written in Zechariah (14:16), "And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles." In the same book (chapter 8:23) we read, "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men of nations of diverse languages shall take hold, even shall take hold of the skirt of a Jew [Authorised Version renders it "of him that is a Jew"], saying, We will go with you; for we have heard that God is with you." There are many other passages in that book to the same effect.

(c.) At the time of the Messiah, the idolatrous images and their memorial, as also the false prophets and the spirit of profanity are to vanish from the earth, as may be seen in Zechariah 13:2, "And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols from the earth, and they shall no more be remembered, also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit [literally 'the spirit of uncleanness'] to pass away from the earth." So also it is written in Isaiah 2:18, "And the idols he shall utterly abolish." So it is also said in Zephaniah 2:11, "The Lord will be terrible unto them, for he will cause all the gods of the earth to waste away, and men shall worship Him, every one from his place, even all the isles of the heathen."

(d.) At the time of the Messiah, there will be no sins and iniquities in the world, particularly not among the Israelitish nation. Thus we find in the law (Deuteronomy 30:6), "And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart and the heart of thy seed to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live." Again, in Zephaniah 3:13, "The remnant of Israel shall not do iniquity, nor speak lies, neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth." Again, in Jeremiah 3:17, "At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord, and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the Lord, to Jerusalem, neither shall they walk any more after the imagination of their evil heart." Again, in Ezekiel 36:25, "And I will sprinkle clean water upon you: from all your impurity, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

And I will give unto you a new heart, and a new spirit will I put within you, and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments and do them." Moreover, see Ezekiel 37:23, "Neither shall they defile themselves any more with the idols nor with their abominations, nor with their transgressions, and I will save them out of all their dwelling-places wherein they have sinned, and I will cleanse them, and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, and David my servant shall be king over them, and they shall have one shepherd, and they shall walk in my judgments and observe my statutes and do them."

(e.) At the time of the king Messiah and after the war with Gog and Magog there will be peace and tranquility throughout the world, and men will no longer require any weapons of war. So it is written in Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." See also Ezekiel 39:9, "And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the bucklers, the bows and the arrows, and the handstaves and the spears, and they shall burn them with fire seven years (ibid verse 10) so that they shall take no wood out of the field, neither cut down any out of the forests, for with the weapons shall they kindle the fire." With these words agrees the prophecy of Hosea 2:20, according to the division of chapters in the Hebrew Bibles, (in the English version it is chapter 2 verse 18) "And I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and I will make them to lie down safely." So says also Zechariah 9:10, "And the battlebow shall be cut off, and he shall speak peace unto the heathen," etc.

(f.) At the time of the king Messiah there will be peace in the Holy Land between the ferocious and domestic animals, so that they will not injure each other, and much less injure a human being, as is evident from the following prophecies of Isaiah 11:6, "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid, and the calf and the young lion, and the fatling together, and a little child shall lead them." (Verse 7) "And the cow and the bear shall feed together; their young ones shall lie down together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox." (Verse 8) "And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice's den." (Verse 9) "They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord," etc. and (ibid 65:25) "And the wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock, and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the Lord." (See also Ezekiel 34:25) "And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land, and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods." (Verse 28) "And they

shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast of the land devour them," etc. (See also Hosea 2:20, or in the English version, 18) "And in that day will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground," etc.

(g.) At the time of the Messiah there will be no troubles, cares, and anxieties, among the restored Israelites, who will then be blessed with a prolonged and more happy life, as is foretold in the following passages of Isaiah (65:16). "He who blesseth himself in the earth shall bless himself in the God of truth, and he that sweareth in the earth shall swear by the God of truth, because the former troubles are forgotten, and because they are hid from mine eyes. (Verse 19) "And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people, and the voice of weeping shall no more be heard in her, nor the voice of crying." (Verse 20) "There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days, for the child shall die a hundred years old, but the sinner being a hundred years old shall be accursed." (Verse 21) "And they shall build houses and inhabit them, and they shall plant vineyards and eat the fruit of them." (Verse 22) "They shall not build and another inhabit, they shall not plant and another eat, for as the days of a tree shall be the days of my people, and mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands."

(h.) At the time of the Messiah the Shechinah (effulgency of divine presence) shall return to Israel as in former days, and the people of Israel increase in prophecy, wisdom, and knowledge, as may be seen by the following quotations from the prophets. (Ezekiel 37:26) "Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will establish and multiply them, and set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore." (Verse 27) "My residence also shall be among them. Yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people." (Verse 28) "And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore." (Ibid 39:29) "Neither will I hide my face any more from them, for I have poured out my Spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord God." (Ibid 43:7) "And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever," etc. (Ibid 48:35) "And the name of the city from that day shall be, 'The Lord is there'" (Joel 2:27) "And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the Lord your God, and there is none else; and my people shall never be ashamed." (Ibid 3:1), in the English Version 2:28) "And it shall come to pass afterwards, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions." (Ibid 3:17) "So ye shall know that I am the Lord your God dwelling in Zion my holy mountain: then shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through it any more." (Ibid 3:21) "For I will avenge their

blood that I had not avenged, for the Lord dwelleth in Zion." (Zechariah 2:14; in the English Version, 2:10) "Sing and rejoice, O daughter of Zion, for, lo! I come and dwell in the midst of thee, saith the Lord." (Isaiah 11:9) "For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea." (Jeremiah 31:34) "And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall know me, from the lowest of them to the highest, saith the Lord: for I will forgive their iniquity, and remember their sin no more."

The above indications pointed out by the prophets as indispensable attributes of the true Messiah, have not been fulfilled in Jesus the Nazarene. Nor have we hitherto seen realized the prophetic assurances already named, or others that we have omitted, to avoid prolixity. And we therefore arrive at the just conclusion, that the true and expected Messiah has not yet come. In him alone all the predicted attributes undoubtedly will be manifested, and through him alone and in no other way, the scriptural promises will be accomplished.

Chapter 2: God's alleged rejection of Israel and the Jews

An argument has been adduced by Christians, to the effect, that the Almighty has rejected the Israelitish nation, because they would not listen to the teachings of the Messiah, his messenger, and because they executed judgment on him. The Lord has, therefore, say they, chosen the Christian nation, and he permitted Christ to suffer martyrdom for their sake and for the salvation of their souls, because they had acknowledged him and put faith in him.

Refutation:—This argument is unfounded; for the Christians themselves confess, that before the coming of Jesus, they (as Gentiles) denied the Almighty, and were idolaters. Even after the coming of Jesus, he was not received as a God, nor believed to be such until some hundred years subsequent to his existence. Yea, they (the Gentiles) themselves carried on exterminating persecution against him, his disciples, apostles, and followers. Nero, the emperor of Rome, for instance, caused Peter and Paul to die an unnatural death, on account of their endeavors to persuade and urge the people to believe in Jesus. Decius, the Roman emperor, caused, in a like spirit, Laurentius to be roasted alive in the year 254 of the vulgar era, because he persuaded people to embrace Christianity. So acted all the emperors that followed him; they persecuted the Christians, and killed the popes, and those who followed the religion of Jesus, as may be gathered from their ecclesiastical histories. The first Byzantine emperor who adopted the Christian faith, was Constantine, who established laws for his co-religionists 300 years after the death of Jesus. In his days lived Arius who composed a

controversial work against the Christian dogmas, but Constantine lent no ear to his opinions. After the death of this monarch, Constantine the Second attached himself to the sect of Arius, and slighted the established doctrines; and his succeeding relative Julian, likewise adhered to the Arian views, and rejected the general principles of the Christian Faith. His example was imitated by several of his successors. There are, even in our times, people who acknowledge the authority of Arius, and who constitute the sect called by his name. This (the original repudiation of Christianity by the Gentiles) is also to be noticed among the [ancient] inhabitants of Prussia; when bishop Adelbert of Prague came to them to instruct them in his religion in the year 990, of the Christian era, they cut him in pieces. The Prussians and Poles were not converted to the Christian religion before the eleventh century, and the Scandinavians not until after the 1400th year of the vulgar era, as is stated in the Ecclesiastical histories. The majority of the followers of Christianity continue even at the present day to adore in their places of worship images of gold and silver, wood, and stone, and many of them show divine reverence to the wafer, or sacramental bread by prostrating themselves before it. These practices they keep up in contradiction to the teachings of Jesus: who rigorously impressed upon his disciples and apostles to abstain from them, as well as from the eating of the sacrifices offered up to idols. We also find in the Gospel, they are forbidden to eat blood, or the flesh of strangled animals; which interdictions are disregarded even by the most scrupulous Christians. They likewise desecrate the true Sabbath day, the stringent commandment of which, was kept by Jesus, and subsequently by his disciples and his followers, during the period of 500 years. From that period, the ancient law was superseded by the Pope enjoining to celebrate the first day of the week, Sunday, as the sacred day. Hence arises the question: How can they boast to be the preferred nation, selected in reward of their homage to Jesus; or how can they assume the name of Christians, since there exists among them, no longer any observer of the Mosaical precepts, which Jesus himself declared inviolable? Besides, they deviate from his statutes by adding to, and diminishing from the dictates of the Gospel, while he pronounced severe maledictions against those who should venture to add or to diminish from his words, as may be learned from the passages above referred to, and will be set forth more fully in chapter 49 of this work.

Chapter 3: Israel's rejection of Jesus left them without a king

A member of the Greek Church, once addressed me in the following words:—"Do you know wherefore you have no longer a king of your own people? It is because you have rejected the faith of Jesus Christ and His kingdom, for He was the king of Israel. On this account the empire of Israel has been destroyed."

I relied to him: "It is known, and evident from the words of the prophets, that in consequence of our manifold iniquities, our kingdom was destroyed in the time of Nebuchadnezzar, when this king led Zedekiah, king of Judah, captive to Babylon.

"This event took place more than four hundred years before the existence of Jesus. The Jews were then successively subjects of the Babylonians, Medes, and Greeks. Long before the birth of Jesus we had been kept in servitude by the Romans. You may see that proved in your Gospel of Luke, 3:1, 'In the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea,' etc. See also John 19:15, 'Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.' Now, as to your ascribing to Jesus the government of Israel, we are at a loss to know who made him king, and where he ruled over Israel. You, members of the Greek Church, were the parties who first acknowledged Christianity in the kingdom of your Messiah, and you still continue in your faith in Him; and, nevertheless, your government has been destroyed, and you have no longer a king of your own people: for a Mohammedan ruler, the Turkish sultan, who is now in possession of the Holy Land, extends his sway over Greece."

There are many other Christian states which formerly elected their own kings, and now are subjected to the Ottoman power. On the other hand, you see the Mahomedans not only disbelieving the doctrines of Jesus, but even mercilessly persecuting the followers of his faith, and notwithstanding this, the empire of the Turks enjoys undisturbed prosperity.

Chapter 4: Rabbi Gamaliel's "prophecy" regarding the church

An eminent disciple of Martin Luther one day, thus argued with me: "You know that in our gospel, Acts 5:34, it is mentioned that Rabbi Gamaliel, a learned and distinguished man, addressed the by-standing Jews in the following terms: (Verse 38) 'Refrain from these men, and let them alone, for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought; (verse 39) but if it be of God ye cannot overthrow it, but it will continue firm, and ye must rebel against the intentions and the counsel of God.' To this he brings forward an example in Theudas and Judas of Galilee, who came forward as Messiahs of their own accord, without approbation and decree of the Almighty, and were in a short time utterly destroyed, with all their followers.

"You see then with your own eyes (said the Lutheran) that this faith, that is to say, the faith of Jesus and his apostles, has not been destroyed these 1500 years and more;

consequently the before-mentioned trial (of the veracity of the Christian faith proposed by the Jewish doctor) is a convincing and perfect proof, that the words and acts of the founders of Christianity met with the full approbation of God."

Upon this, I gave him the following reply:—The words reported in the gospel as having been used by Rabbi Gamaliel are not accredited among us; but were it even acknowledged that Rabbi Gamaliel did thus express himself, we know that he did not speak in a prophetic spirit, for he was no prophet, but that he expressed merely his views from what he had experienced in his own time of Theudas and Judas of Galilee. Hence it is possible he might have uttered his views, as Scripture says (Psalm 19:12), "Who can be aware of errors," etc. On the other hand, you may perceive incontrovertible testimony of the contrary from the idolatrous service which preceded Jesus, and which was renewed after his time, and did not cease for so many centuries. You well know that the worship of idols was introduced previously to the existence of our ancestor Abraham; for Terah the father of Abraham was an idolater, as is recorded in scripture, Joshua 24:2, concerning the father of Abraham and Nahor, "and they served other Gods."

Since that period to the present time, 3000 years and more have elapsed; and the worship of images still continues. For we see your Evangelists, who follow in the steps of Martin Luther, accuse those who walk in the faith of the pope of Rome of rendering homage to images in their houses of worship; yet it is manifest, that image-worship proceeds not from the will of God.

Thus has also the infidel Mohammed instituted the spurious religion of the Muslims. A religion the falsity of which you yourself acknowledge, and nevertheless this delusion lasted for above 1000 years, and is to this day not put down.

Would you say then that these two creeds, viz., Popery and Mohammedanism because they are not yet abolished, were established by the approbation or command of God? I have not the slightest idea, that a reasonable being can entertain such a supposition: but the fact is, that the Almighty says "leave the foolish-minded to themselves, for in futurity they will have to render account of their actions" (vide treatise *Abodah Zarah*, on occasion of a question asked of Rabbi Gamaliel). Moreover it is known, from the words of the prophets, that idolatry will continue till the time of the Messiah, whose advent we expect; for concerning that period see Isaiah 2:18, "And the idols he shall utterly abolish." Again Zephaniah 2:11, "The Lord will be terrible unto them, for he will bring low all the gods of the earth," "and men shall worship Him every one from his place, even all the isles of the heathen." Again Zechariah 13:2, "And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will cut off the name of the idols out of the

land, and they shall no more be remembered" etc. Then will be fulfilled the passage contained in the same prophet, 34:9. "And the Lord shall be King over all the earth, in that day the Lord shall be One and His name One."

Chapter 5: Gentiles rule over Jews because of the Jews' sins

The same personage argued with me another time, and said, "You ought to know that, as long as you fulfilled the behests of God and his commandments, you were prosperous in this world; for the kings of Israel were great and mighty, so that our forefathers, and many other Gentile nations, were held under subjection by you; but now, since you have sinned against God, the case is reversed; for the rule has departed from you and passed over to us, so has our subjection departed from us and passed over to you. For, at present, you have no king or prince among you, and you are held under subjection by all nations. At the same time, our prosperity is a great proof of the goodness of our faith, as your former prosperity was a proof of the goodness of your faith, hence this your degraded state must be considered a convincing illustration of your evil doings in rejecting our creed." To this I replied:—

"Your argument is fallacious in all its bearings, for in this world there are many wicked men, whose lot is as prosperous as if they were truly righteous men, while we frequently see the pious laboring under severe afflictions; an instance of this we find in the success of Nebuchadnezzar the wicked, and Alexander the Great, who extended their rule over a great part of the world, and especially over the land of the Israelites, nor had there ever been seen kings more prosperous in their government than they were. Yet they, with all their success, cannot be brought forward as an argument in favor of the superiority of the faith of the Gentiles over that of the subjugated Israelites, it being a well-known fact that they (the great kings) were worshippers of idols and the planets. Now in our day even you, Christians, agree that Islamism is nothing but a false system introduced by their pretended prophet Mohammed; nevertheless, they are prosperous in this world, and their religion and power spread over a large portion of Asia and Africa: consequently, how can you say that their prosperity is a proof of the goodness of their creed, seeing also that Scripture shows the reverse. Thus Proverbs says, 3:12, "For the Lord chastiseth him whom He loveth," etc. The argument, therefore, which you derived from your prosperity in favor of your religion, is groundless, and must appear so to every man of good sense.

Chapter 6: No prophecy for current exile proves Jesus is Messiah

A Christian scholar argued once with me, saying, "We have examined the words of the prophets, and have not

found that even a single allusion was made or a prophecy revealed, concerning the captivity in which you at present are—namely, the captivity into which you were brought by the Romans. All the prophets speak only about the captivity and the conquest of Babylon by the Medes and Persians, yet not a word is contained in Holy Writ concerning your present captivity nor your deliverance from it, nor of the downfall of the Roman dominion. How can it then be known, that the appointed Messiah has not arrived, or that he is to arrive at some future period—since all the promises recorded in the works of the prophets were fulfilled at the time of the second temple—and it is this to which Matthew alludes, (11:13), ‘For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John [the Baptist].’”

Upon this I made the following reply:

It is not to be wondered at, that you do not find any statement in the writings of the prophets, concerning the present captivity and the redemption therefrom, etc., for it is written Psalm 147:19-20, "He declareth His word unto Jacob, His statues and His judgments unto Israel. He has not dealt so with any nation, nor has He made known His judgments unto them."

But I will show, first, distinct prophecies concerning our dispersion and our scattered state in this exile—a dispersion which is wonderful—a scattered state, which is unprecedented, for where have we seen any other nation spread throughout all parts of the earth?

Secondly. I will bring forward prophecies fixing our continuance in this captivity for a protracted period extending to the latter days; and also promises of the prophets regarding our redemption from this captivity; and likewise many predictions from the sacred writers respecting the overthrow of the Roman and other powers who must be deemed unworthy to be allied with the nation of Israel at the time of its restoration. There are several other prophecies yet unaccomplished, which will come to pass at the appointed season.

Now referring to the prophecy concerning the captivity: viz., the captivity effected by the Romans, we read in the law (Deuteronomy 28:64), "And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other;" for, in the Roman captivity, the Jews belonging to the second temple were dispersed and scattered in diverse countries then possessed by the Romans. They brought with them people of various nations to besiege Jerusalem for they could not make an easy conquest on account of the great valor of the Jews. Such was not the case at the destruction of the first temple, the Jews being then too few and weak, so that the unaided Babylonians were sufficient to reduce them and to lead them into captivity; they were, therefore, only banished to Babel, as we read at the end of the Second Chronicles (36:20), "And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon, where they were servants to him and his sons,

until the reign of the kingdom of Persia." Thus we find also in Ezra (2:1), "Now these are the children of the province that went up out of the captivity of those who had been carried away, whom Nebuchadnezzar, the king of Babylon, had carried away to Babylon, and came again unto Jerusalem and Judah, every one into his city." See also in the same prophet (Ezra 1:11), "All the vessels of gold and of silver were 5400; all these did Sheshbazzar bring with them of the captivity that were brought up from Babylon into Jerusalem." You see here, from the testimony of Scripture, that the Israelites were only exiled to Babel, and returned only from thence. When we therefore read in Deuteronomy (3:3), "That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, etc., and gather thee from all the nations whither the Lord thy God has scattered thee," we cannot possibly ascribe it to the captivity of Babel, but only to that of Rome.

When, further, the prophet Ezekiel says (22:15), "And I will scatter thee among the heathen and disperse thee in the countries and cause thy impurity to cease," we cannot possibly refer it to any other than this last captivity, viz., the Roman captivity. For in the captivity of Babylon their impurity was not removed from them. When they had left Babylon and arrived in the Holy Land, there were still among them men who had taken heathen wives, who profaned the Sabbath and committed many more iniquities; hence they became again subject to captivity for their many sins. To this must be referred the remark of the prophet, that by reason of the length of this sad captivity, our sins and our impurities will be removed from us, so that we shall not be exiled again. See Lamentations 4:22, "The punishment of thy iniquity is accomplished, O daughter of Zion; he will no more carry thee away into captivity, etc." See also Amos 1:6, "Thus saith the Lord, For three transgressions of Gaza, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof, because they carried away captive the whole captivity, to deliver them up to Edom;" and in the same chapter (verse 1:9), "Thus saith the Lord, For three transgressions of Tyre, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof, because they delivered up the whole captivity to Edom, and remembered not the brotherly covenant."

These prophecies referred to the future: viz., to the destruction of the second temple, for those who had escaped from the captivity of Titus and fled to the countries of the Philistines and to Tyre, both adjacent to the Holy Land, were seized and delivered up to the hand of Edom; that is Titus and his army; for the Nazarene Nations, and the Romans at their head, are alluded to in Scripture under the title of Edom, or daughter of Edom, in like manner as those nations which were converted to the creed of Islam, are called by the Hebrews, Ishmaelites, on account of their supposed ancestor Ismael.

Now, what the prophet says (Amos 1:9) concerning the whole captivity, means, that there remained no fugitive or runaway who was not subject to the yoke of the Romans,

while there had remained many remnants during the Babylonian captivity who did not yield to the supremacy of the Chaldeans; and therefore, went to Egypt, as Scripture testifies (see Jeremiah 43:7), "So they came into the land of Egypt, for they obeyed not the voice of the Lord." As to the expression of Amos (1:9), "And they remembered not the brotherly covenant," it alludes to the covenant that existed between Hiram, king of Tyre, and King Solomon; for Scripture says, "That they made a covenant together and addressed each other as brothers (see 1 Kings 9:13).

We shall now proceed to consult scripture respecting our continuance in this protracted captivity; and we shall perceive that after having surmounted many days of trouble and affliction, the Lord will have mercy again on us in the latter days; and we shall be convinced that, though our deliverance is so long deferred, the Lord will not forget His covenant and His oath which He swore unto our fathers. See Deuteronomy 4:30-31, "When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, thou shalt turn to the Lord thy God, and be obedient unto His voice. For the Lord thy God is a merciful God, and He will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which He swore unto them." Hosea 3:4, "For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without Ephod, and without Teraphim—afterwards shall the children of Israel return and seek the Lord, their God, and David their king, and shall reverence the Lord in the latter days." This prophecy evidently refers to our present exile; for we have no king, and no prince in Israel, but are under the dominion of Gentiles and their monarchs. We cannot offer sacrifices to God, or seek information by means of the Urim and Thummim, neither is there a false oracle of the Teraphim, which, according to the representation of idolaters, revealed coming events—besides all Israelites are now in captivity, and what the prophet says, "Afterwards Israel shall return," refers to the latter days, close to the time of salvation when the children of Israel shall come back penitently and seek the Lord their God, and David their king, for then they will regret their ejaculation (1 Kings 12:16), "What portion have we in David? Neither have we an inheritance in the son of Jesse;" for he who denies the kingdom of David is as sinful as if he had rebelled against the Lord himself, who has given an everlasting dominion unto David and his seed. At the time of salvation shall be fulfilled the saying of Jeremiah 30:9, "They shall serve the Lord their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them." We find besides an allusion to the redemption from the captivity by the Romans in the law, as well as in many passages of the Prophets (see Deuteronomy 30:3 "Then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity and have compassion on thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations;" and (verse 4) "If any of them be driven out to the uttermost of heaven, from thence will I the Lord thy God

gather thee and from thence will He fetch them." (Verse 5) "And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it, and He will do thee good and multiply thee above thy fathers (verse 6). And the Lord thy God will circumcise thy heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart and with all thy soul, that thou mayst live." We see that these passages were not fulfilled on the return of Judah and Benjamin from Babylon; for the number of those who returned amounted to only 42,360, as recorded in Ezra 2. The majority remained in Babylon because they were unwilling to go back to Jerusalem. How then can it be maintained that the promise has been fulfilled, which declares "if any of them be driven out to the uttermost, part of heaven, from thence the Lord thy God will gather thee, and from thence will He fetch thee."

If even at the time of the second temple, during an abode in the Holy Land, the Lord has not done us more good, nor multiplied us more than our fathers—how can it be asserted that the promises have been fulfilled? Viz. "And He will do thee good and multiply thee above thy fathers." For during all the days of the second temple we were in distress and trouble. See Daniel 9:25 "And after three score and two weeks the streets shall be built again and the wall even in troublesome times." See also the prophecy of Isaiah 43:5, "Fear not, for I am with thee; I will bring thy seed from the East, and gather thee from the West." (Verse 6) "I will say to the North give up, and to the South keep not back. Bring my sons from far and my daughters from the end of the earth." Again (11:12), "And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth." See also the prophecy of Ezekiel 39:28, "But I shall gather them into their own land, and leave none of them any more there" (namely in the land of the enemy).

Assurances of this description, were not realized at the exit of the Israelites from Babylon to Jerusalem, for they not having been dispersed, after the captivity of Babylon, in the four quarters of the globe, how can the promise have been fulfilled that says, "And He shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth?"

There having remained many in the captivity of Babylon, as we have mentioned above, how was the prophecy brought to pass which states "And I will leave none of them there any more?" We have further to show that during the time of the construction of the second temple, the prediction was not fulfilled which is contained in Isaiah 60:10, "And the son of the strangers shall build up the walls; and kings shall minister unto thee." For at that time the heathens derided the Jews, saying (Nehemiah 4:2) "What are these feeble Jews doing?" etc. And they prevented and interrupted them in building up the walls; moreover the passage, "And kings shall serve thee" was

not fulfilled at that period; for we read in Ezra 9:9 "We are bondsmen; yet our God has not forsaken us in our bondage, but hath extended mercy unto us in the sight of the kings of Persia." This is also written in Nehemiah 9:36, "Behold we are servants this day, and for the land that Thou gavest unto our Fathers to eat the fruit thereof, and the good thereof, behold we are servants in it." (Verse 37) "And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings who thou hast set over us, because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies and over our cattle at their pleasure, and we are in the greatest distress." Further, we find in Isaiah 60:11, "Therefore thy gates shall be open continually, they shall not be shut day or night." This prediction did not come to pass during the second temple. For we observe in Nehemiah 7:3, "And I said unto them, let not the gates of Jerusalem be opened until the sun be hot," etc. Hence you may conclude, that not only these promises, as well as the above-mentioned assurances, were not fulfilled during the time of the second temple, but that just the contrary took place in respect to them as we have already related. We must therefore arrive at the conviction, that these prophecies and promises, and many others not mentioned here, referred to our redemption from the captivity in which we now are.

We shall now proceed to consider the predicted downfall of the Gentile nations, which is to take place in the days of the expected Messiah. Concerning that period, we read in Numbers 24:17, "I see it, though it will not happen now; I behold it, though not nigh, there shall come a star out of Jacob, and a scepter shall rise out of Israel, it breaketh down the corners of Moab and crusheth all the children of Seth." The king Messiah, whose grandeur and luster make him comparable with the stars of heaven, will, according to this prophecy, subject to his power all the children of Seth and He will perform such heroic deeds as were never accomplished before Him.

To the exploits of this king, are referable the conquests predicted in the above chapter of Numbers (24:18-19), "And Edom shall become an inheritance, and Seir shall be a possessor of its enemies, and Israel shall do valiant deeds; and he who is descended from Jacob shall rule, and he that escapeth from the city [of the enemy] shall perish."

The many predictions regarding Edom recorded in Isaiah, Obadiah, and other prophets, have, by our laws, been explained as alluding to Rome, which, since the time of the destruction of the second temple, has exhibited the fiercest persecutors, and most implacable enemies of the Jews and their faith.

To this effect, Isaiah says, (34:8), "For the Lord hath a day of vengeance, a year of retributions for the controversy of Zion." Every iniquitous act committed by the adversary of Zion will meet with condign visitation, and human liberty shall triumph on the ruins of tyranny. Hence he says, "And the redeemed of the Lord shall return and enter Zion with joy, and ever-lasting gladness shall be upon their head.

Exultation and rejoicing shall reach them, and sorrow and affliction shall flee from them far away." The comfort promised in the Lamentation of Jeremiah will then be realized, for in 4:22, it is said: "The punishment of thine iniquity, O daughter of Zion, has been fulfilled; he will no more lead thee into captivity. He has visited thine iniquity, O daughter of Edom, he hath laid bare thy sins." Love will then be shown by the Gentiles to the Jews, and according to Isaiah 66:20, "They will bring your brethren from among all the Gentiles as a gift unto the Lord . . . to Jerusalem, my holy mountain." An objection has been raised against a complete restoration of the Jews, grounded on some partial texts of Scripture; but let us refer those who make the allegation, to the following scriptural passages which afford a complete refutation of such a supposition: For Joel says (4:19, or 3:19 in the English bible), "Egypt shall be a desolation, and Edom a howling wilderness, on account of the violence done to the children of Judah, and on account of the innocent blood which they shed in their land. But Judah shall dwell for ever, and Jerusalem from generation to generation."

We should not take these words in the narrow limits in which they may present themselves to readers, who fix upon a single scriptural passage without comparing it with the more extensive detailed passages of a similar character. In fact, we have already stated, that by Edom we understand Rome; and we must, with justice to truth, submit that Egypt means the heavy yoke of the Mahomedan power.

The Ishmaelites (or Mahomedans) have traced their origin back to Hagar, "the Mitzrith," or Egyptian bondwoman, and were, therefore, called by the prophet, Mitzrayim (Egyptians).

It appears also perfectly accountable that the prophet speaks of the children of Judah rather than of the whole house of Israel. For, on the overthrow of the Ten Tribes, the name of the prevailing and distinguished tribe of Judah was adopted to designate the whole nation of Israel. Hence he says, "And Judah shall remain there and for ever, and Jerusalem from generation to generation." Obadiah actually predicts that all Israel (not only Judah) shall obtain the ultimate victory. He says (verse 1:18), "And the house of Jacob shall be as a fire, and the house of Joseph as a flame, and the house of Esau as stubble," etc. And he concludes by saying (1:21), "And the saviours shall go up to the mount Zion, to judge the mount of Esau, and the kingdom shall belong unto the Lord."

We will now, for the sake of clearness, review in regular order the prophecies which are unfulfilled, and are yet to come to pass in the days of the expected Messiah.

1. The ingathering of the Ten Tribes, and their union with Judah and Benjamin under the dominion of one king of the house of Judah (see Ezekiel 37:16), "And now, O son of man, take unto thee

- one staff, and write thereon, for Judah and Israel," etc.
2. The rise of Gog and Magog, and their incursions into the territory of Israel (see Ezekiel 38 and 39. See also Zechariah 14:12), "And this shall be the plague which shall strike all the nations who have carried their hosts against Jerusalem," etc.
 3. The Mount of Olives shall be rent asunder (see Zechariah 14:4), "And his feet shall stand on that day on the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem, and the mount of Olives shall be rent asunder in the midst of the east and the west, so as to become a very extended valley," etc.
 4. The river of Egypt shall be divided, and dry up prior to the gathering of the exiles of Judah (see Isaiah 11:15-16). "And the Lord shall cause the tongue of the sea of Egypt to be dried up, and He will wave His hand against the river in the strength of His spirit; and He will smite it into seven rivers. And men shall walk through it dry shod, and it shall be a path for the remnant of his people which shall remain from Assyria as it was unto Israel on the day when they went out of Egypt."
 5. Ezekiel 47, verse 1 and 12, "The waters issued out from under the threshold of the house eastward. And by the river shall grow all trees for meat, whose leaf shall not fade, nor the fruit thereof be consumed. It shall bring forth new fruit according to his month. Because their waters they issued out of the sanctuary, and the fruit thereof shall be for meat, and the leaf thereof for medicine." Zechariah 14:8, "And it shall be in that day that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem, half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea, in summer and in winter shall it be." Joel 3:18, "It shall come to pass in that day, that the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, and all the rivers of Judah shall flow with waters; and a fountain shall come forth of the house of the Lord, and shall water the valley of Sheetim."
 6. The conversion of the Gentiles to Judaism, see Zechariah 8:23, "They will say (to the Jews), We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you."
 7. The annual pilgrimage of the remnant of all nations to Jerusalem "to bow down to the King the Lord of Hosts," etc. see Zechariah 14:17.
 8. The celebration of the Sabbath, and the new moons by all the Gentiles (see the end of the Book of Isaiah verse 66:23).
 9. The total extinction of idolatry. See Isaiah 2:18, "And the idols he will consume completely;" and Isaiah 42:17, "They shall turn backward, and be filled with shame who trust in images, and say unto the molten statues, Ye are our gods!" See also Psalm 97:7.
 10. Unity of faith shall prevail throughout the world. See Isaiah 45:23., "By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, righteousness hath come forth from my mouth, and a word which shall not emptily return, namely, that unto me every knee shall bend, and by me every tongue shall swear." Zechariah 14:9 "And the Lord shall be a King over the whole earth; on that day shall the Lord be one and his name One.
 11. The kingdom of Israel shall be the principal one in existence. See Isaiah 60:10, "And the children of strangers shall build thy walls, and their kings shall serve thee." Also, *ibid*, "For the nation and the kingdom which shall not be willing to serve thee shall perish, and the people shall be utterly destroyed." Daniel 7:27, "And the kingdom and the dominion and the multitude of kingdoms under the whole heaven shall be given to the people of saints of the most high, whose kingdom shall be an everlasting kingdom, and all rulers shall serve and obey Him."
 12. Peace shall be restored after the subjugation of the resisting powers. See Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall strike their swords into ploughshares and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall no more lift up sword against nation, and they shall no more learn warfare." Hosea 2:20 [2:18], "And the bow and the sword and the warfare I will break down and remove from the land, and ye shall rest in security."
 13. That there should be peace and harmony even among the animals, in the land of Israel; nor should they harm man. See Isaiah 11:6, "The wolf shall also dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid, and the calf, and the young lion, and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them." (Verse 7) "And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox." (Verse 8) "And the suckling child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den." (Verse 9) "They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea."

14. The like auspicious promises are repeated and amplified Isaiah 65:6 and Ezekiel 34:25. Also, in Hosea 2:28, we read, "And in that day, I will make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground," etc.
15. Sin shall no longer prevail. See Deuteronomy 30:6, "And the Lord shall circumcise thy heart and the heart of they seed to love the Lord thy God," etc. Isaiah 60:21, "And thy people, being righteous altogether, shall possess the land forever. They are scions of my planting, the work of my hands, my glory." Jeremiah 3:17, "At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord, and all nations shall straightway flock into it, and shall no more go after the perversion of their evil heart." Ibid, chapter 50:20, "In those days and at that time, saith the Lord, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought and not be, and the sin of Judah, and it shall not be found, for I shall forgive those I shall leave behind." Ezekiel 36:25-26, "And I shall sprinkle upon you pure water, and ye shall be clean; from all your impurities will I cleanse you," etc. "And I will give unto you a new heart, and a new spirit will I put into you, and I will remove the heart of stone out of your flesh; and I will give unto you a heart of flesh, and my spirit will I put into you, and I will do it so that you shall walk in my statutes, and observe my judgments and do them." Again, ibid 37:23 and 24, "Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions; but I will save them out of all their dwelling-places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them, so that they shall be my people, and I will be their God. And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd; they shall also walk in my judgments and observe my statutes and do them."
16. Ancient troubles and sorrows shall cease forever. See Isaiah 65:16, "He that blesseth himself in the land shall bless himself with the God of Truth, and he that sweareth in the land shall swear by the God of Truth; for the former troubles shall be forgotten, and be withdrawn from mine eyes." Again (verse 19), "And I shall exult in Jerusalem, and rejoice in my people. The voice of crying shall not be heard," etc.
17. The Divine presence (Shechinah) shall be restored, as is promised in the prophecy of Ezekiel 37:26-28, "And I shall make unto them an everlasting covenant it shall be unto them. And I shall favour them and multiply them, and I shall put my sanctuary in the midst of them, my divine presence shall for ever be among them, and I shall be unto them as a God, and they shall be unto me as a people, and all the nations shall know that I the Lord am sanctifying Israel, since my sanctuary shall for ever be amongst them." Again, ibid 39:29, "And I shall not hide any more my countenance from them, since I have poured my spirit over the house of Israel, saith the Lord God." Joel 2:27, "And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and I am the Lord your God residing in Zion my holy mountain; and Jerusalem shall be holy, and strangers shall no more pass through it." See also Isaiah 11:9, "And the earth shall be full of knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea."
18. The prophet Elisah will appear before the coming of that "great and awful day" (see the end of Malachi).
19. The future temple will be rebuilt according to the design predetermined by the Almighty (see Ezekiel 40 to 45).
20. The ancient division of the Holy Land will be resumed. See Ezekiel 47:13, commencing "Thus saith the Lord your God, This is the border whereby ye shall inherit the land according to the twelve tribes of Israel," etc.
21. The resurrection will take place in those latter days. See Deuteronomy 32:39, "Behold I, even I, am ever the same, and there is no other god with me. I bring to death, and I bring to life again; I crush and I heal again," etc. Isaiah 26:19, "Thy dead shall live again, together with my dead body shall rise again. Awake and sing, ye that live in the dust," etc. See also Daniel 12:2, "And many of those that sleep in the dust shall awake; these for eternal life and those for disgrace and everlasting horror."

These points are subjects of ardent expectation, and will surely be fulfilled at the appointed time of the King Messiah. Nothing that is promised will be withheld, "for God is not a man who lieth."

A strong corroboration of our belief in the triumphs of the Messiah is afforded us by the description of the fifth kingdom in Daniel 2. The fifth kingdom, not represented by any part of the image seen in Nebuchadnezzar's vision, will subsist for ever; that is to say, the state and the faith of Israel will supersede all other kingdoms and creeds. This is predicted in the following words of Daniel 2:44:- "And in the days of those kings, the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which will never be destroyed, and his kingdom will not be left to another people, but it will crush and demolish all those kingdoms, and it shall last for ever." Israel is called "The people of saints (or holy people) of

the most High," a designation of which we find many instances in our Holy Scriptures.

The epithet "holy people" is given us, for example, in Deuteronomy 7:6, "For thou art a holy people unto the Lord thy God, and He has chosen thee to be unto Him a people select from all the nations" etc. Isaiah 62:12, "And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the Lord." Jeremiah 2:3, "Israel is holiness unto the Lord, the firstling of his produce," etc.

The important passage in Daniel 7:18, "And the saints of the most high shall receive and possess the kingdom to eternity and to the eternity of eternities," etc., relates, therefore, as every unbiased reader must perceive, to the people of Israel, and to no other nation, for surely the same Providence which has established us, and has blessed us with a holy revelation, will also watch over us and render our future condition great, glorious, and free from the recurrence of past dangers.

Chapter 7: No prophecy for current exile proves curse of Lev 26:38

Christians have raised the following argument against our restoration:—They say, in the captivity of Egypt you [Jews] have been kept four hundred years; in that of Babylon, seventy years; but in subjugation by the Romans your captivity has been prolonged more than 1500 years. Moreover, you had received predictions which determined with exactness the duration of your two former exiles, while that of the present time was not even revealed to the prophets, so that now it may be said, You are suffering under the curse written in Leviticus 26:38, "And ye shall be lost among the gentiles, and the land of your enemies shall consume you." The very length of your exile is a proof that God does not desire to lead you back to the land of your fathers.

Reply:— The communication made to Abraham of the period fixed for Israel's captivity in Egypt was merely incidental, it being explanatory of the delay in the appropriation of the territory promised to that patriarch. When the Lord said to him, "Thou must know, thy seed shall be strangers in a land which shall not be theirs, and they shall make them serve, and shall afflict them four hundred years," it intimated that the land would only be allotted to the posterity of Abraham after the iniquity of the first inhabitants of Palestine would be full, and when, according to the unerring Divine prescience, the fit time for releasing the Jews from their taskmasters, and for punishing the Canaanites, would arrive. The long period for Israel's humiliation in Egypt allowed, therefore, ample time for the nations of Palestine to repent and to abandon their evil doings. The length of the Babylonian captivity was, according to our humble view, limited to seventy years, because seventy sabbatical years had been neglected.

The duration of the exile of the Jews was thus appointed to be equal to the number of years during which the divine ordinance of abstaining from husbandry and of giving rest to the soil, had been broken. Thus we read in Leviticus 26:34 and 35, "Then shall the land enjoy her sabbaths, as long as it lieth desolate, and ye shall be in your enemies' land, even then shall the land rest and enjoy her sabbaths,. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest, because it did not rest in your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it." With this passage we compare the following of 2 Chronicles 36:21:—"To fulfill the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah until the land had enjoyed her sabbaths, for as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfill three score and ten years."

The special object of the captivity of Babylon had been attained by the short exile, the wider object of their present exile, however, requires a more prolonged period. We have now to expiate the sins committed from the time of Israel's first entrance into the Holy Land, —sins which have created a division between us and the Lord; therefore, Divine Wisdom has ordained that we shall abide our time in dispersion until the approach of the latter days. Thus says Ezekiel 22:15, "And I will scatter thee among the gentiles and disperse thee in the countries, and will consume thy filthiness out of thee. To this captivity also alludes the promise in Lamentations 4:22, "Thine iniquity, O daughter of Zion, is ended; He will no more cause thee to go into captivity." We have already, in a former quotation from 2 Chronicles, shown the real cause of the second captivity, and are now enabled satisfactorily to infer from the above extract from Lamentations that troubles endured in our present exile have been decreed with the view of purifying us from our sins, and of bringing to pass the prediction of Deuteronomy 30:6, "And the Lord will circumcise thy heart and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul for the sake of thy own life." In regard to this present captivity, it is also said in Ezekiel 36:26, "And I will give unto you a new heart and a new spirit I will place in the midst of you." Again (ibid verse 27), "And I will make that you shall walk in my statutes and observe my judgments and do them." There are many other promises which have not as yet been realized, because the ancient sins are not completely eradicated. We have moreover to state that the time of the ultimate redemption is unrevealed, because the knowledge of it would not encourage the timorous if they were to perceive it to be at too remote a distance, to persevere in godliness, nor would it avail the refractory, who would be the more presumptuous if they were to notice that the approaching restoration is not delayed by their own evil ways. The founder of the Christian faith was himself of the opinion that the period of the restoration was to remain unknown to his disciples, and he gave, in the book of Acts (1:6-7), a striking proof that he was neither a messiah nor a divine being. We find there, "When they [viz., the apostles], therefore, were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time

restore again the kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them, "It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power." The term of this captivity has indeed not been confided to any man, and is solely known to God, whose knowledge is unsearchable.

Our opinion, that our restoration depends on repentance, is founded on the following passage from Deuteronomy 30:1 to 6:— "And it shall come to pass when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and shall call to mind among all the nations whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee; and thou shalt turn unto the Lord thy God and shalt obey His voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children with all thine heart and with all thy soul: that then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity and have compassion on thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the uttermost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will He fetch thee; and the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed; and thou shalt possess it, and he will do thee good and multiply thee above thy fathers, and the Lord thy God will circumcise thy heart and the heart of thy seed," etc.

On our own will, then, depends our repentance, and consequently also the abbreviation of the period of our captivity.

From the verse in Leviticus 26:38, "And ye shall be lost among the gentiles, and the land of your enemies shall consume you," it must not be inferred that an irrevocable loss or a total perdition is meant. The Hebrew word expressive of loss, "Abad," alludes to the temporary state of despair,—a state in which a man is unable to escape the impending danger, though relief and deliverance may be his portion at some future day. Hence Isaiah 27:13, "And the lost ones in Assyria and those exiled in the land of Egypt shall come," etc.

If "Abad" (to lose or be lost) were to be taken in the sense of complete perdition or cessation of existence, it could not have been said in Leviticus 26:44, "And even this, when they shall be in the land of their enemies, I shall not reject them nor abhor them so as to consume them and to break my covenant with them, for I am the Lord their God." See also Isaiah 66:22, "For as the new heavens and the new earth which I am making remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain." Jeremiah 30:11, "For I am with thee, saith the Lord, to save thee; though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, I will not make a full end of thee; but I will correct thee in measure and will not leave thee altogether unpunished."

The warning pronounced in Leviticus 26:38, "And the land of your enemies shall consume you," has, unfortunately been fulfilled in a grievous measure; many of our brethren have sealed with their blood their fidelity to the faith of

their fathers, undergoing the penalties described in Psalm 44:22, "For thy sake we are slain all the day long, we are considered like sheep for the slaughter."

The argument, that the length of our present captivity is a proof of our total rejection from the special favor of the Almighty has no reasonable foundation whatever. The designs of the Almighty take their regular and unerring course through hundreds and thousands of years. They are most wisely conceived, although their working and ultimate completion escape our perception, or extend beyond our terrestrial existence. Besides this, their own history elucidates the truth of the saying uttered by the psalmist (Psalm 90:4), "A thousand years are in Thine eyes, only like yesterday which is past." The world had existed more than two thousand years before the Almighty revealed Himself, and chose a nation from the midst of a nation, with trials, and signs, and miracles, and warfare, and a strong hand and an outstretched arm, and awfully great doings."

Finally, we would remind those who taunt us with an everlasting abandonment, because of the restoration not having as yet been granted to us, that the salvation through Jesus, which forms their religious boasting, and which, according to their doctrines, saved the souls of the pious patriarchs from the dominion of Satan, did not come to pass till about four thousand years after the creation of man, why should they then object to our waiting for the time of favor when the appointed period of our restoration shall arrive?

Chapter 8: Jews cannot receive tribal inheritance because of lost genealogy

We were once questioned by a Christian, how we could expect to be reinstated in the inheritance of our several tribes, seeing that we are totally unaware of which tribe we are descended, and being so completely mixed up with each other as not to possess any means of tracing our pedigree?

To this we replied: —

The tribes led into captivity by Salmonassar, king of Assyria, were not destroyed, but merely transported from one country to another. Judah, the principal tribe, and Benjamin, remained alone in Palestine. Many of the exiles of the ten tribes who returned settled among the tribe of Judah, who, continuing in the land of their fathers, gave the name of Judah (in Latin Judæus—hence the curtailed name Jew, formerly spelled Jue) to the whole remnant of Israel.

Thus we find in the book of Esther, that Mordecai, though descended from Benjamin, was called, like all the other exiles of Persia, a Jehudi (i.e., a Judæan, or Jew). The

descendants of the priests and the Levites have to this day retained the knowledge of their origin. Those who are ignorant of their origin will, at the time of our restoration, be endowed by Divine aid, with the necessary knowledge of their descent. For the prophet Elijah will come before "the great and awful day," and he will turn the heart of the children to their fathers'!

WE SHALL NOW PROCEED TO THE EXPLANATION OF SUCH BIBLICAL PASSAGES AS ARE ASSUMED BY CHRISTIANS TO BEAR REFERENCE TO CERTAIN POINTS OF THEIR FAITH.

Chapter 9: Plurality of Elohim proves doctrine of the Trinity (Gen 1:1)

Genesis 1:1, "In the beginning Elohim [God] created the heaven and the earth." Elohim, ending in a plural form as though it meant Gods, has been interpreted by Christians as an evidence of the plurality in the Deity, consisting of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, who are denominated Trinity. Our view of the term Elohim is as follows: —

Those who are conversant with the Hebrew language are aware that Elohim relates not merely to the Supreme Being, but also to angels and human authorities. Manoah, the father of Samson (mentioned in Judges 13:22), after he found that he had perceived "an angel of the Lord," said, "We shall surely die, for we have seen Elohim." In reference to human authorities, we read in Exodus 22:9, "Before the Elohim [judges] the cause of the two men shall be brought, and he, whom the Elohim [judges] shall declare guilty, shall pay twofold unto his neighbour." Having thus shown that the word Elohim bears various interpretations, it is perfectly out of question to refer it in the first verse of Genesis, to a plurality of persons in the Deity, of which assumption no corroboration whatever is given in our Revelation.

We should like to understand how the name of Elohim, given by God to Moses, Exodus 7:1, in the words, "Behold I have made thee an Elohim to Pharaoh," can be allowed by Christian expounders to allude to a plurality of persons, and represent in a mortal creature a visible Trinity?

Suppose, for argument's sake, Elohim does allude to a plurality of persons, how could the occurrence of Eloha (the singular form of Elohim) be justified? Thus we find in Deuteronomy 32:15, "And he forsook the Eloha [God] who made him," and Psalm 50:22, "Ye who forget Eloha [God]." Again, how can the advocates of the existence of a Trinity account for the alternate employment of Elohim and Eloha? See Isaiah 44:6, "And besides me there is no Elohim;" and, in verse 8, we read, "Is there an Eloha besides me?" If the truth of the doctrine of the Trinity depend on the term "Elohim," the word "Eloha" most

decidedly disproves it, since it renders the allusion to a plurality perfectly unnecessary.

The real object in the plural form in Elohim is to represent authority and power. The genius of the Hebrew language admits this particularity not merely in Elohim, but in words of profane signification. Thus is used Adonim (lords) instead of Adon (lord). For instance, Isaiah 19:4, "In the hand of a hard Adonim [lord, literally lords], Genesis 39:20, "And the Adonai [lords instead of Adon, Lord] took him, viz., Joseph," etc.; Exodus 21:4, "If בַּעֲלָיו [Baiolov, his master] is with him," etc.

The plural form is used instead of the singular in many modern languages (for instance you instead of thou).

Chapter 10: Plurality of Elohim proves doctrine of the Trinity (Gen 1:26)

GENESIS 1:26, "And God said, We will make man in our image according to our likeness, and they shall rule over the fish of the sea," etc.

From the words, "We will make man," the Christian expounders of this verse infer, that an allusion to a plurality of divine persons is made.

Refutation:—If the verb נַעֲשֶׂה Naasseh, we will make, related to a divine plurality, why do we find immediately afterwards the singular form, "And God created man in His image?" or why not, "And they created man?" The same explanation which we have given in the preceding chapter on the employment of the plural form, holds also good in regard to the present passage.

To bring to mind the manifold powers of the Almighty employed in the creation of the noblest of His creatures, the plural is employed by way of high distinction. We will point out some other passages which contain the verb in the plural for the sake of emphasis, although they indicate a strict unity of person. Genesis 11:7, "Go to, let us go down and let us confound their speech," instead of "let me," etc. Job 18:2, "Ye shall understand, and then we will speak" (instead of I will speak).

The words of the Almighty, "We will make man in our image," may have been addressed to the Angels, for "He maketh known his will to his servants." (Amos 3:7) Thus we find in Genesis 18:17, "Should I conceal from Abraham what I am doing?" In the same chapter occurs a parallel expression to the above-mentioned passage in Genesis 11:7; but there the singular number is used, "I will go down and see." If a doctrine of plurality of personages were to be enforced by the grammatical form of words, the very alterations which occur between the singular and the plural would frustrate such a doctrine, and suggest doubt and uncertainty instead of confidence and conviction. Our

Holy Scriptures contradict in the most direct terms every opinion which departs from the belief in an immutable unity, or ascribes corporeity to him in whose spiritual likeness the soul of man is created with the object of acknowledging, obeying, and adoring the eternal one God.

It is remarkable, that Christians are desirous to make us believe in a doctrine of the trinity, which is so totally unauthorized by our Holy Bible, and even by their own New Testament.

Our Divine Law tells us expressly in Deuteronomy 6:4, "Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord."

Ibid. 4:35, "Thou hast been shewn these things, in order to know that the Lord is God, and there is none besides Him."

And again, ibid (verse 39) "Thou shalt know today and take it to heart, that the Lord he is God in heaven above, and on the earth beneath, and there is none besides."

Isaiah 43:11, says, "I, even I, am the Lord, and there is no saviour besides me."

Ibid 44:6, "Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel and his Redeemer, I am the first and I am the last, and besides me there is no God."

Ibid 45:5, "I am the Lord, and there is none else besides me."

Again (verse 6), "In order that they shall know, from the rising of the sun [east] unto the west, that there is no one besides me; I am the Lord, and there is none else."

Ibid 40:18, "And to whom will you liken God, and what likeness have you to compare with him."

Jeremiah 10:6, "There is none like Thee, O lord. Thou art great, and thy name is great in power."

Hosea 13:4, "I am the Lord thy God from the land of Egypt, and thou shalt know no God but me; and there is no Saviour besides me."

Psalms 86:10, "For thou art great and doing miracles; Thou alone art the Lord."

Nehemiah 9:6, "Thou alone art the Lord, Thou hast made the heavens, the heavens of the heavens, and all their hosts," etc.

1 Chronicles 17:20, "There is none like unto thee, and there is no God like unto thee, and there is no God besides thee, according to all we have heard with our ears."

We might adduce numerous other similar corroborative passages, were it needful. In order to counteract the dangerous effect of the belief in a good and evil principle

(a belief prevailing in Persia, etc.), our Divine Instructor tells us, "Behold now that I even I am ever the same, and there is no God with me; I kill and I bring to life; I crush and heal again." Isaiah 45:7, "He formeth light and createth darkness, maketh peace and createth evil; I the Lord am doing all these things." The Deity, who calls into being conditions and events of totally opposite natures, and who, by mere power of will brings things into being, or reduces them into annihilation, is, according to all scriptural testimony, the most absolute Unity, and as such, without the slightest shade of mysticism. This Unity can alone be comprehended by our finite understanding. He who alone possesses absolute power, and is the first cause, is the Creator of Beings who depend on His will, remain ever, and in every respect, subjected to His Supreme Mandate, and are liable to change and decay. Hence, also, human reason subscribes to the doctrine that God is an absolute and a perfect Unity.

This absolute Unity cannot, under any logical view, be divided into a Duality or a Trinity. If such division is to be forced upon the faith of man, reason remonstrates against it; the faculty of thought given to us by the Almighty protests against a false representation of the Divine Being, and proves that God has constituted the mind in such a manner as to worship Him in accordance with His true attributes. From the moment that a divisibility of essence is attributed to God, we should be compelled to maintain, with the Polytheists, that He is deficient of omnipresence, and that He is comparable with created matter. How can we, then, repudiate such clear testimonies of God's unity, as are contained in passages like the following, Isaiah 40:18: "And unto whom will ye liken God, and what likeness have ye to compare unto Him?" We cannot even grant that God from His own resolve would reproduce, and double or treble Himself. Such an assumption could only spring from the narrowest views of a sophistical or a perverted mind; but it could not emanate from a faith which commands veneration and rational obedience.

Even the authors of the New Testament have given opinions which disprove the untenable position of the Christians who make belief in the Trinity an indispensable portion of their creed. Matthew 12:32, says, "And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come." The same is repeated in Mark 3:28-29, and Luke 12:10. These authorities of the Christians have their data here clearly averred that there is no identity between the true Deity and the personages subsequently added to the name of the Divine Being. In Mark 13:32, we have also a proof of the want of identity between the Son and the Father: "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, either the Son, but the Father."

Nor do we find throughout the New Testament any evidence to show that the belief in a Trinity constitutes a

part of the code of Christianity, or that Jesus and God are to be held as One and the same Being. On the contrary, Jesus himself is made to profess, in Matthew 10:40, "He that receiveth you receives me, and He that receiveth me receiveth Him that sent me." Here Jesus puts himself merely as a messenger of God. Paul in his epistle to the Romans 5:15, also says, "The gift by grace, which is by one man Jesus Christ," etc. Matthew 20:18, again says, "Behold, we go to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man shall be betrayed," etc.; and in verse 28 he states, "Even as the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister," etc.

In the very prayer instituted by Jesus, and denominated after him "The Lord's Prayer," his disciples are taught to invoke the Father who is in Heaven, but are not told to use the combination subsequently made of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. We see clearly that the New Testament affords not a single evidence to authorize a change from the pure belief in the Divine Unity to the complex and unintelligible dogma of that of the Trinity.

Chapter 11: Adam's fall and Original Sin

Genesis 2:17, "And from the tree of knowledge of good and evil thou shalt not eat. For on the day thou shalt eat thereof thou shalt surely die." The religious authorities of the Christians deduce from this passage the belief that Adam, by transgressing the Divine prohibition, forfeited individually, and through him all his posterity, the enjoyment of the everlasting beatitude of the soul, and that he and his seed, including our patriarchs, prophets, and pious ancestors, fell a prey to hell, from which they were only saved through the death and intercession of Jesus.

The reduplication of the Hebrew phrase מוֹתֶתָּ מוֹתֶתָּ (dying thou shalt die, or, thou shalt surely die), is taken to be a proper testimony of this singular tenet. As a further proof that the ancient personages mentioned in the Hebrew Scriptures were aware of the doom awaiting them after their quitting this life on earth, Christian authors have cited the lament of Jacob in Genesis 37:35, "I shall go down into hell (Sheol) to my son in mourning." Also the words of Hezekiah, in Isaiah 38:10, have been pointed out as corroborative evidence, for he says there, "I shall enter the gates of hell (Sheol)."

Refutation:—When Adam was told by the Almighty, "On the day thou shalt eat thereof thou shalt surely die," it was implied that Adam should actually be punished with the loss of life, on the very same day he should counteract the command of God; but we evidently see by his continued existence that he only ensured the penalty of death. A passage similar to the one we have just quoted occurs in 1 Kings 2:37, where Shimei, once the insolent enemy of the fugitive king, David, was prohibited by the son of that monarch from quitting the capital; and he was told, "On the day thou shalt go forth from Jerusalem and pass the

brook of Kidron, thou must know that thou shalt surely die." Yet Shimei was not punished with death on the same day he left Jerusalem. In like sense, we take the Divine injunction ending with the term, "Thou shalt surely die." It meant that on the day Adam would, by his disobedience, incur the displeasure of the Almighty, he would be afflicted by various punishments, such as reaping thorns and thistles, and living by his hard labor on the scanty produce of an unblest soil, and until his severe trials should terminate in the fatal dispensation of death. This sentence being the most prominent and inevitable destiny of the transgressor, it was announced in the first instance, but not with the intent of its being immediately fulfilled.

As to the idea of the reduplication of the verb "to die," showing that the punishment attending the transgression of Adam was of an hereditary nature, we have found in Scripture a complete refutation of such an interpretation; for we read in Deuteronomy 24:16, "Fathers shall not die for children, nor children for fathers." The principle here laid down cannot solely be referred to the sentence of death, but relates also to every minor punishment, so that neither parents nor children are to be amenable to punishment for each other's misdeeds.

The reader, on referring to the whole matter of Genesis 3, will perceive that it had not been the object of the Almighty to remove Adam from the earth on the day he committed the transgression of the Divine command. The punishments Adam had to endure, received their completion only at his death. In the passage above cited, it is stated that the mission of the first patriarch was the propagation of his species. His mode of subsistence is there pointed out to consist in long and wearying toil, and only after a period predetermined "by the Almighty" the doom was to be accomplished, which was pronounced in the words, "Thou art dust, and unto dust shalt thou return." These last words evidently show that the retribution of Adam's sin related to the body, and not to the soul, for nothing but the inanimate corpse is the prey of the earth its native element. Of that portion alone it is appositely remarked in Ecclesiastes 12:7, "The dust returneth to the earth as it was, but the spirit shall return to God who gave it."

We see thus that the formula מוֹתֶתָּ מוֹתֶתָּ ("dying thou shalt die," or "thou shalt surely die"), alludes to the perishable state of the body, and not to the state of the soul. But we have further evidence that the souls of the posterity of Adam were not consigned to perdition, in consequence of the sin of the first father; for we find in the Levitical laws that abscission of the soul from her people is to be the punishment for various sins. See, for instance, Leviticus 7:27: So that each man who dies in his own guilt must suffer for his own iniquity, and is severed from his people, that is to say, his soul is excluded from a reunion with the souls of those who have gone before him into the realms of bliss. On the other hand, we find numerous instances, that,

in describing the death of the righteous, the text used runs thus: "And they were gathered unto their people," see, for instance, Genesis 25:17; Deuteronomy 32:50. A sentence in direct opposition to the annihilation of the soul, illustrating our argument, may be found in Leviticus 22:3, "That the soul shall be cut off from my presence, I am the Lord."

In these early records of humanity we have a clear lesson of the immortality of the soul. The pious and worthy are received into undisturbed beatitude, while those who defile themselves by sins are removed from the enjoyment of the glorious contemplation of the Deity.

Far be it, therefore, from us to put faith in the doctrine propounded by Christians divines, that the predecessors of Jesus were, without regard to their innocence or piety, totally and collectively abandoned, and consigned to the abode of hell. Far be it from us to believe that, that God causes "His pious servants to see perdition"; that He hated those who loved Him, or that He regarded them favorably while they lied on earth, yet disowned them after they had quitted the scenes of their pious aspirations.

It is utterly revolting to the mind to attribute to the almighty the slightest degree of injustice, or of indifference to man, whether he be righteous or iniquitous. How could such a prophet as Jonah have prayed, Jonah 4:3, "And now, O Lord, do Thou take my soul from me, for my death is better than my life." Would he, cognizant of the future punishment of the soul, have desired to be taken away from this earth, in order to undergo inevitable torments in after life? Again, when Enoch and Elijah were "taken away by God," as Scripture expresses it, and which removal could happen to the soul only, should we imagine that God designed to manifest His special love to them, by giving them over to constant torments in hell?

We have to combat another unfounded opinion set forth by our antagonists. They maintain that their "God Messiah," through his own death, saved the souls of those who had gone before him from their doom in hell. How can it be asserted that the first sin of the first man should meet with retrospective and prospective atonement, through the perpetration of the far more heinous crime in laying a violent hand on the body of a presumed Deity? The difficulty of the position of those who maintain these views is increased by the very words of Paul, in his epistle to the Romans 5:14: "Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression," etc.

In Leviticus 18:5, we find a still stronger proof of the inconsistency of believing that a divine displeasure was felt against all predecessors of Jesus. We read there, "And ye shall observe my statutes and my commandments which man shall perform, and through which he shall live." Scripture here points out to us in the clearest and most incontestable manner, that immortal bliss is conceded to

the individual who faithfully adheres to the Divine will, so that man is not in any respect dependant on the acts which may have been performed by his ancestors. We may now apply this reasoning to the sin of Adam, since we see that man receives rewards and punishments according to his performance of the Divine commandments, and that he is individually responsible for his actions, also Adam could only be personally accountable for the sin he had committed.

The commandments, being denominated "a tree of life, for those who take firm hold of them," do not suggest that our terrestrial existence is to be prolonged by their observance; but they are calculated to place us on an equality of excellency with the patriarchs, the chosen servants of God. Without closing our ears against truth and reason, we cannot admit that a responsibility is imposed upon man for the sins of his first progenitor. Man's own immortal life is imperiled by his own doings, and therefore God, in His Divine mercy, has enjoined on us His commandments, "which man performeth and lives thereby." Passages to the same effect are repeatedly found even in the book of Ezekiel, see 18:19, where he speaks concerning the life of the soul, "He who does judgment and righteousness shall surely live and not die." And again, it is written there, "And who does judgment and righteousness, his soul shall live;" for except the life of the soul, there is no life but what is succeeded by death. From all that has been adduced hitherto, it is clear, that the holy and righteous men were not condemned to hell, nor afflicted with the spiritual torments of the first man, they not having rebelled against the Lord; but, on the contrary, they found favor in His sight, and secured everlasting salvation through their own merits, without requiring extraneous interference to save their souls. In support of our conviction Ezekiel says, chapter 18:20, "The soul that sinneth shall die. The son shall not be visited through the iniquity of the father, nor the father through the iniquity of the son," etc. The object of the prophet is to declare that there shall be no condemnation to the soul, except through its own crime, not through the crime of another. It is here in place to settle an apparent contradiction of Scripture—namely, We find stated in the ten commandments, "He visiteth the iniquities of the fathers on their children," etc.; from this an hereditary punishment seems obvious: but on a close examination, this phrase is satisfactorily explained. The punishment of fathers on their children takes place where the iniquity is continued to be exercised by the children; and therefore Holy Writ holds out the threat of successive visitation, saying, On those who hate me, which explanation is applicable to all similar passages in Scripture. Conformably to this interpretation, the author of the Lamentations says, chapter 5:7, "Our fathers sinned and are no more, and we have borne their iniquities," which means, "Our fathers, through their guilty conduct, brought on the troubles of the captivity, and they died in consequence of their misdeeds. We also, who succeeded them in this captivity, have added to our own transgressions those of our ancestors, by imitating their

evil deeds, and thus fulfilling the prediction, Leviticus 26:39, "And they who are left among you shall pine away in their iniquity in your enemy's land, and also through the iniquities of their fathers retained among them they shall pine away." The pious contemporaries of the captivity, however, as for instance, Jeremiah, Baruch the son of Nerejah, Ezekiel, Daniel with his companions, and others, were benefited through the very trials which they shared with their sinful brethren; for among the Gentile governments they were raised to far greater distinction than they had attained under the kings of Israel. These advantages they enjoyed solely through the care with which they avoided the deeds of their wicked ancestors; and therefore they labored not under the infliction of curses which the Almighty ordains to the race of sinners. The opinion of the Christians, that no salvation was granted prior to the death of Jesus, meets with another refutation in Luke 16:19: the history of the beggar Lazarus represents that he was after death to repose in beatitude on the bosom of the patriarch Abraham. This shows that Abraham and Lazarus were not in hell, and leads to the conclusion that the pious were not deprived of a felicitous eternity, even before Jesus was said to have redeemed them, but that the wicked only meet with merited retribution.

We return once more to the reduplication of the term thou shalt surely die, which, as we have before stated, has been misapplied to the death of the soul. The argument is totally wrong, and rests on the misapprehension of the Hebrew idiom, according to which the infinitive is frequently placed before the ordinary tense; see, for instance, 2 Kings 8:10, "Go and say, Thou shalt surely not live; and the Lord revealed unto me that he shall surely die" (the infinitive *מוֹת* to die, and *יָחַי* to live, here accompanies the respective future tenses). The sentence quoted here serves as a reply to the question asked by the king, "Shall I recover from my illness?" (literally live through). The answer can only suit the question. The enquirer asks merely whether he is to live on or die (in a bodily sense), and the answer refers to the death with regard to the body only, and is given with the double verbs. Such a reduplication occurs also in 1 Samuel 14:44, where Saul says, *וַיָּדָע יִשְׂרָאֵל כִּי מוֹת יִהְיֶה* "Surely Jonathan shall die," and in the same book (22:16), *וַיָּדָע אֲחִימֵלֵךְ כִּי מוֹת יִהְיֶה* "Surely, Ahimelech, thou shalt die." Though the threat of death is expressed with the repetition of the verb *מוֹת* (to die) it has no other signification than bodily death. Other verbs are repeated in a like manner, for instance, Exodus 21:20, *וַיִּקַּח אֹתוֹ הַיּוֹדֵם*, he shall surely be revenged: Ibid 19:13, *וַיִּקַּח אֹתוֹ הַיּוֹדֵם* "He shall surely be stoned or shot through." Genesis 15:13, *וְעַד יָדַעְתָּ דָע* (knowing thou shalt know.) "thou shalt surely know." On the other hand, we find in Scripture that the use of the simple unrepeated verb, *מוֹת*, to die, is sufficient to indicate perdition of the soul, as, for instance, Ezekiel 18:20, "The soul that sinneth it shall die,"

הִיא יָאֵת מוֹת. From the preceding proofs and argument it is established that there is not the remotest allusion to hell in the lament of Jacob. Genesis 37:35, "I shall go down into the grave (Sheol) unto my son mourning." Neither in the thanksgiving of Hezekiah (Isaiah chapter 38:10), where he says, "I shall go to the gates of the grave *לְשֵׁאוֹל* (Sheol). Thus we find also in the Psalm (49:16, in the English 49:15), "Like sheep they are laid into the grave (Sheol)." Again, "Sheol cannot thank thee." In these passages, the word *מָוֶת* (maveth) death might be used appropriately for Sheol (the grave). In other parts likewise Sheol is used as the resting place of the inanimate body; for instance, Job 14:13, "O that Thou wouldst hide me in the (Sheol);" Ecclesiastes 9:10, "In the (Sheol) wither thou art going;" Genesis 37:35, "I will go down into the grave (Sheol) unto my son;" and instances where Sheol means the depth of the earth are to be met with in the Psalm (139:8), "If I make my bed in the grave (or depth of the earth), Thou art there;" and Job 11:8, "And deeper than the grave what canst thou know?"

Chapter 12: "Prophetic proof" of Jesus' victory over Satan (Gen 3:15)

Genesis 3:15, "And I will put an enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed. It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." The Christians attempt to strengthen their faith by maintaining that the words, "it shall bruise thy head," is a type of Jesus, who is to kill Satan, styled in holy writ "the serpent."

Refutation:—The interpretation is fallacious, for if the passage under consideration meant that Jesus was to kill Satan, that is to say, destroy the cause of sin, there ought not to be any sinners among his believers, but since they still continue committing sins, that opinion is overthrown both by their practical life and by the same verse on which they found this doctrine. The end of the passage (thou shalt bruise its heel) shows the unsoundness of such assertions. How could the serpent (sin) do injury after its being destroyed? Moreover, how could Satan induce the Jews and the heathen to kill Jesus and his disciples, he (Jesus) already having destroyed Satan. Paul himself affords a refutation by promising (Romans 16:20), "And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly." The same writer, in his first Epistle to the Thessalonians, states (chapter 2:18), "Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I, Paul, once and again, but Satan hindered us." This tends to show that, even after the death of Jesus, in the times of Paul, Satan had still preserved his existence and exercised his dominion over those who had been saved through Jesus, and that the Gospel is at variance with this symbolical interpretation.

Chapter 13: Jesus is Abraham's seed which blesses the nations (Gen 22:18)

Genesis 22:18, "And in thy seed shall the nations of the earth be blessed, because thou (Abraham) hast obeyed my voice." On this verse the Christians found the assertion, that the promise given to Abraham as to the blessing of all nations through his seed, had no reference to the whole race of Abraham's descendants, but specially and exclusive to Jesus as the pre-eminent posterity of the patriarch; that, therefore, this promise was never realized on other individuals.

Refutation:—Here, again, we have to treat with a palpable fallacy, because the Christians generally argue in favor of their religion from detached portions of the prophecies, without going deeply into the sacred subject and studying the context. The slightest attention to the verse which precedes the one cited, will enable us to judge that no single individual is meant by the Divine bounty. For there we see plainly predicted, "For I will surely bless thee, and multiply thy seed like the stars of heaven, and like the sand on the shore of the sea, and thy seed shall inherit the gates of his enemies; and with thy seed shall be blessed all the nations of the earth," refers to the whole posterity, which is to be abundant as the stars of heaven, and the sand on the shore of the sea. Through the entire seed, through the whole people of Israel the other nations of the earth are to be blessed. Moses gives his testimony to this in addressing the people of Israel, Deuteronomy 1:10, "The Lord your God hath multiplied you; and behold ye are this day as the stars of heaven for multitude." To this effect, also, the Almighty gave His assurances to Israel and Jacob, see Genesis 26:4, "In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed;" and *ibid* 28:14, the Lord says to Jacob, "And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shall spread abroad to the west, to the east, to the north, and to the south, and through thee and thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed." The Divine promises of love agree with the one given to Abraham in Genesis 12:3, "And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse them that curse thee; and in thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed;" and *ibid* 18:18, "And Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him."

The patriarchs had become a blessing to all the nations of the earth by fearlessly acknowledging the existence, unity, and omnipotence of the Lord, and by proclaiming His name in all their migrations; and they had raised themselves above all other people by their communion with the Divine Being, who awards true blessing and spiritual beatitude.

An equal reward of bliss was appointed unto their children following their paths and observing the virtuous acts of their forefathers. Agreeably to this, Scripture declares, Genesis 18:19, "For I know him, that he will command his

children and his household after him, that they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment, that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He hath spoken of him." See also Isaiah 51:2, "Look unto Abraham your father, and unto Sarah that bare you: for I called him alone, and blessed him and increased him." It is well known no spiritual blessing has ever fallen to the lot of the Gentiles, unless conveyed to them through the medium of Israel's religion. This will be borne out by the following quotations:—Numbers 10:32, "And it shall be, if thou go with us, yea it shall be, that what goodness the Lord shall do unto us [Israelites] the same we do unto thee [Gentiles]." Isaiah 14:1, "For the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land, and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob." *Ibid* 56:6, "Also the sons of the strangers that join themselves to the Lord to serve him and to love the name of the Lord to be his servants, every one that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of my covenant." (Verse 7) "Even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer," etc. *Ibid* 60:3, "And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising." Zechariah 2:15 (English version, verse 11), "And many nations shall be joined to the Lord in that day, and shall be my people, and I will dwell in the midst of thee, and thou shalt know that the Lord of Hosts hath sent me unto thee." *Ibid* 8:23, "Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, in those days it shall come to pass that ten men out of all languages of the nations, shall take hold, even shall take hold of the skirt of him that is a Jew, saying, We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." And Psalm 67:2 (verse 1 in the English), "God will be gracious unto and will bless us, and cause His face to shine upon us." —Selah. "That thy ways may be known upon the earth," etc. Passages analogous to the preceding will be amply discussed in the course of this work.

Chapter 14: Prophecy of the scepter fulfilled in Jesus (Gen 49:10)

Genesis 49:10, "The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a law-giver from between his feet, until Shiloh come, and unto him shall belong the gathering of the people."

The Christians argue from this verse, that the patriarch Jacob did hereby prophesy the coming of Jesus, whom he (Jacob) called Shiloh, and through him (Jesus) the prophecy was fulfilled; for the scepter did not depart from the Jews until Jesus appeared: with Him only departed royalty from the Jews.

Refutation:—The Christians labor under the misconception, that Jesus was a member of the tribe of Judah, and king of the Jews. Now, were this interpretation the true one, how can they reconcile it with the fact, that the scepter did not depart from Judah at the advent of the

so-called Shiloh? Moreover, we find that Judah lost the sovereignty at the destruction of the first temple, when Nebuchadnezzar led Zedekiah, king of Judah, into captivity; an event which happened 430 years anterior to the birth of Jesus. During the existence of the second temple, however, we find no indication that a descendant of Judah governed Israel. Herod and his descendant, who occupied the throne until the fall of the second temple, were of low birth, and belonged not to the tribe of Judah. How can they, therefore, maintain that the scepter had not departed from Judah, nor royalty from Israel, until the coming of Jesus?

In investigating the true sense of the words, "The scepter shall not depart from Judah (meaning the tribe of Judah), we perceive, that the patriarch Jacob, by his blessing, bequeathed to Judah the supremacy over his brethren. Accordingly, he says, Genesis 49:8, "The children of thy father shall bow down to thee;" and on this account he compares him with the lion as the king among the animals. Hence we find the tribe of Judah taking the precedence in the encampments (see Numbers 10:13, et. seq.), "And Nashon, the prince of that tribe, was admitted on the first day [of the dedication of the tabernacle] to offer up his sacrifice" (see Numbers 7:12). Subsequently, when Joshua was dead, and the Israelites inquired of the Lord, Judges 1:1, "Who shall go up for us against the Canaanites first to fight against them? The Lord said, Judah shall go up," etc. From these passages it appears, that, after the leader had left the tribes without a successor, they inquired which of them should assume the rule and precedence, and the Almighty awarded it to the tribe of Judah who, 1 Chronicles 5:2, was the most powerful among his brethren. This superiority may be ascribed to David, who said of himself, 1 Chronicles 28:4, "The Lord chose me before the house of my fathers to be king over Israel for ever; for he hath chosen Judah to be the ruler; and of the house of Judah the house of my father, among the sons of my father he willed to make me king over all Israel." From David the royalty descended to Zedekiah, king of Judah, who was of the seed of David. With this king the sovereignty departed from the tribe of Judah. There remained during the whole series of the two captivities only a few dignitaries as princes and chiefs of the captivities who had been denominated by the patriarch Jacob יִשְׂרָאֵל (law-givers).

During the existence of the second temple, and also at the time when the priests and their subordinates ruled, there were found princes, descended from David and from the lineage of Zerubbabel, as is stated in the work "Seder Ngolam Zuta."

It is true, we find that originally King Saul was elected ruler, though not descending from the tribe of Judah, but from that of Benjamin; but, at that period, it was against the desire of the Almighty to admit a king. On that account he would not have a king chosen from the tribe to which the promise of a permanent dynasty had been given; and

He appointed for them a king who should occupy the throne only for a short time. To this fact Scripture alludes, Hosea 13:11, "I gave thee a king in mine anger, and removed him in my wrath," for he and his children were slain, and the sway departed from him. All this misfortune came to pass, because the Israelites had desired a king in the time of Samuel, the prophet of the Lord, who was their judge and leader: hence we find in 1 Samuel 8:7, "for they have not rejected thee, but me they have rejected from ruling over them." Yet, even in the times of Samuel, the dignity of the leadership was not totally removed from the tribe of Judah, for David was the man who conducted Israel to battle. Hence we must interpret the words "The scepter shall not depart from Judah," according to their literal sense, viz., that the scepter of royalty shall not be taken from Judah as long as the kingdom shall last. And the words "nor a lawgiver from between his feet," viz., that the lawgivers shall not depart, must have reference to the sages and scribes who, being from the seed of Judah; were rulers and leaders during the captivity; for the chiefs of the captivity were descendants of David, and the majority of our exiles were from the tribe of Judah, and many of them were of the lineage of David. They distinguished themselves as scholars and theologians, i.e. sages and scribes, and therefore they were called lawgivers, in the same manner as Moses, the "chief of the prophets," is called in the Hebrew לֹדֵי הַחַיִּים "lawgiver," (see Deuteronomy 33:21). For there is the portion of the lawgiver concealed, "and he led the heads of the people, and executed the justice of the Lord, and His judgments with Israel." We see, also, in Judges, "From Nachir descended lawgivers, and from Zebulon those who handle the pen of the scribe," which refers again to the sages and the learned who were the rulers of their people. The words from "his feet" are synonymous with his seed. The word שִׁלּוֹחַ (Shiloh) signifies the youngest child, or the last child, and is derived from the same root as שָׁלַח (and towards her young one, Deuteronomy 28:57), which the Chaldee version renders "and towards the youngest of her children." The term Shiloh, refers to our expected king, Messiah, and who will appear in the latter days and be one of the seed of Judah. The words until Shiloh shall come, do not mean that at the coming of Shiloh, the scepter shall immediately depart; but, on the contrary, that it shall not depart thereafter. The word עַד (until) is used in the same sense in the following instances, (Genesis 28:15), "For I will not leave thee until I shall have done what I have promised unto thee;" and (Deuteronomy 7:24), "No man shall be able to stand before thee until thou shalt have destroyed them." The word אֲדָרָתָא meaning "authority," in the verse of Genesis under consideration recurs in the Proverbs, 30:17. The supreme power and authority of the Messiah alluded to in Jacob's prophecy is predicted, also, in Daniel, who says "And all rulers shall serve and obey him."

Chapter 15: Jesus argues against kashrut (Matt. 15:11)

Deuteronomy 14:3, "Thou shalt not eat any abomination." The Christians adduce against this passage one from Matthew 15:11, "Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth;" they consider us, therefore, in the wrong for not eating of unclean animals.

Refutation:—Independent of motives of economy, persons may refuse certain articles of food on different grounds. The food may be too expensive, and therefore, unsuitable to persons of a low condition; or it may be of too inferior a quality, and, therefore, unfit for a man in a high station of life. It is obvious that Christians will not argue, that the food of unclean animals is denied us on account of the luxuriousness of such nourishment, or the unworthiness of the Israelites, for Scripture inculcates the reverse, viz., that certain creatures are unclean, and that the Israelites are to be a holy nation. Hence, if Christians partake of food denominated unclean, they must consider themselves unholy. Our conclusion is borne out by Scripture, for we read in Leviticus 11:8, "they [certain animals] shall be unclean unto you." This implies, that they shall be forbidden to you Israelites, who are a holy nation, but not to you, the Gentiles, who have not been equally distinguished by the Almighty.

Of the same tenor is the admonition in Leviticus 11:43 and 44, "Ye shall not make yourselves abominable with any creeping thing that creepeth, neither shall you make yourselves unclean with them that ye should be defiled thereby. For I am the Lord your God, ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves and ye shall be holy: for I am holy. Neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth." See also Leviticus 20:25 and 26, "Ye shall therefore put difference between clean beasts and unclean, and between unclean fowls and clean; and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have separated from you as unclean. And ye shall be holy unto me; for I the Lord am holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be mine." Also, Deuteronomy 14:1-3, "Ye are children of the Lord your God: ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead, for thou art a holy nation unto the Lord thy God. And the Lord has chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing." This portion concludes with the words (verse 21), "Ye shall not eat of anything that dieth of itself, thou shalt give it unto the stranger that is in thy gates that he may eat it, or thou mayest sell it unto an alien: for thou art a holy people unto the Lord thy God; thou shalt not seethe a kid in its mother's milk". These verses afford sufficient evidence, that such creatures, on account of their being unclean, were

prohibited food to the Israelites, who are a holy people, designated the "children of the Lord." For unclean food defiles the body of him who eats of it; and a defiled body infects the soul. Now, a soul that is defiled will not be admitted into the sanctuary, that is to say, before the Divine presence, but will be deprived of a glorious future. The declaration of the revealed law, that unclean food defiles the body of the eater, at once overthrows the argument of the Christians, "that things entering the mouth do not defile a man, but only those proceeding from the mouth."

In what way can the opinion of the Gentiles, based on their Gospel, be reconciled with the various precepts regarding certain animals expressed in many parts of our Holy Writ? For instance, "Do not defile yourselves by them." "Ye shall be defiled though them." "Do not defile your souls by the creeping things," etc. All this must bring conviction, that unclean food doth defile both body and soul. Who then will venture to render lawful what God has forbidden, and annul His statutes? Moreover, if the founders of Christianity had considered it lawful for the Gentiles to partake of unclean food, why did they prescribe to them (in Acts 15:20), "to abstain from things strangled and from blood?" It ought also to be kept in mind, that Adam incurred punishment for transgressing a command which had been imparted to him only once. How much greater must the transgression be of those who venture to eat of unclean food which had been so repeatedly prohibited to them? Besides, we find great inconsistencies in this principle contained in the Books of Matthew and Mark ("That not what goeth into the mouth defiles," etc.), for many intoxicating drinks will doubtlessly defile when allowed to go down into the mouth of man in excess, while from the mouth of man come out the words of the living God, praises and thanksgivings to His glorious name, wise and moral maxims, and social converse for the interchange of ideas. All such utterance does not defile man; and he may through his words even deserve to be called a holy man.

As to our sacred Scripture, it gives the assurance, that, in times to come, even the Gentiles will abstain from eating blood and unclean and abominable food. See Zechariah 9:7, "And I shall remove his blood from his mouth, and his abominations from between his teeth."

Chapter 16: Jews cursed because they cannot keep Torah perfectly (Deut 27:26)

Deuteronomy 27:26, "Cursed is he who will not keep the words of this law to fulfill them; and all the people shall say Amen." The Christians infer from this verse that the law of Moses curses all who neglect any commandment of the law, and there being so many commandments, no man can properly practice them: hence, all Jews must be cursed.

Refutation:—The tenor of this verse does not go to pronounce a curse against every one who will not keep the obligations and prohibitory laws set forth in the Books of Moses. A strict fulfillment of all the commandments is utterly impossible. Even our legislator Moses, the chief of prophets, observed only those which he found practicable out of Palestine; since many of the divine precepts had been especially adapted to and where solely practicable in the Holy Land. How much greater is the claim of other Israelites to be forgiven if they abandon certain precepts, the performance of which is rendered impracticable in consequence of existing circumstances? Nor will they be included in the curse if they transgress a commandment when led astray by the impulse of passion, provided it be followed by sincere repentance, "for there is no righteous man on earth who will do good and not sin;" and repentance is the balm and remedy for the pain and the mortification of sin. An instance is afforded in King David, though he sinned in the case of Uriah, the Hittite, he was not cursed (by reason of his repentance); on the contrary, he was blessed by the Almighty with an everlasting benediction, since a covenant was made with him that his throne should never be destroyed. See Jeremiah 33:20, "Thus speaketh the Lord, if ye can break my covenant with the day and my covenant with the night, and there should not be day and night in their season, then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon this throne." The merit of his general piety availed during a long period to him and his seed after him, and to all his nation. See Isaiah 37:35, "And I shall protect the city and save it for mine own sake and for the sake of my servant David." This is a clear evidence, that a man failing to observe a portion of the divine law will not be accursed, so long as no opportunity of evincing his obedience has been afforded him. In like manner will he be spared who, sinning under the influence of passion, resolutely abandons his error, and shows sincere contrition. Only such a man is cursed who refuses to believe in the revealed will of the Almighty, or who rejects and contemns the divine commands.

In corroboration of the argument, we may refer to the identical words of the passage under consideration, viz., "Cursed is he who will not keep the words of the law to fulfill them." If no exception whatever were admissible in the rigid observance of the divine precepts, the inspired penman necessarily would have said, "Cursed be he who will not keep every word of the law." The latter words, "to fulfill them," shows that the malediction concerns only those who evade the opportunity of manifesting their obedience. We further find in Deuteronomy 28:15, "And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt not obey the voice of the Lord thy God to keep and fulfill all the commands and statutes which I command you this day, all these curses shall come upon thee and reach thee." This warning does not refer to a person who neglects the keeping and fulfillment of all the commandments without any exception, but to him who does not listen to the voice of

God, but impiously rebels against it, and shakes off the yoke of divine government. The curses will come upon him if he does not finally return to God with perfect repentance. It is acknowledged that God gave the law to His people from pure love, not for His own sake, but for their benefit; nor did He multiply His commandments to weigh His creatures down with their burden, and bring perdition upon man's soul, but to increase the claim of reward, and prepare the spirit for a glorious futurity. Not a single commandment is to be despised, for each contains the seed of heavenly bliss. The more strictly and diligently man conforms to the number of divine precepts, the greater becomes his worth and merit in the eyes of the Lord.

We find that Moses yearned to enter into the Holy Land in order to obtain an opportunity to fulfill all those commandments that had been ordained to be practiced in Palestine. Here we must remind the reader that the curses proclaimed in Deuteronomy 27, obviously relate to the commission of secret and revolting sins, for the maledictions contain the expression "וְיִשְׁתֵּן בְּסֵתֶר" And who put it (viz., the idol) into a secret place," while overt transgressions meet punishment from the human tribunal. In a like manner we find, in the same chapter, that he will be cursed "who smites his neighbor secretly;" this alludes, also, to the slanderer who secretly injures his fellow-man. A parallel expression occurs in verse 5 of the 101st Psalm, in the words "Whoso privily slandereth his neighbour, him will I cut off." To avoid the error of its being understood with regard to corporal punishment, the law adds the words secretly or privately. A similar curse recoils upon him who refuses to observe certain laws, because he considers the word of God unimportant, a presumption which certainly ranks among the secret sins. To sum up our review of these twelve verses of Deuteronomy 27, we remark, that in the same mode as the public transgressor is punished by public justice here below so the secret transgressor will be punished by the invisible and supreme justice of our Heavenly Father. Only that man will be condemned who obstinately persists in vice and scornfully disdains mercy which the Lord offers to repentant sinners. This again may be illustrated by the words in Deuteronomy 29:29, "The secret things belong to the Lord our God, but matters revealed, belong to us and to our children for ever." The Christians have argued against us from this verse without fully comprehending its purport, and we can oppose them on their own grounds, by referring them to the concluding verses of their Gospel, viz., "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecies of these books, if any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in these books; and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of these prophecies, God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life and out of the Holy City, and from the promises written in these books." Now the Christians must be well aware that they have acted in contradiction to these emphatic warnings, in having both added and diminished from their own

doctrines. Thus, for instance, they have made an innovation by keeping the Sabbath on the first day of the week instead of the seventh, for which no sanction whatever can be found in the Gospel. On the other hand, they have totally disregarded commands enforced on them. See Acts 15:20, where the eating of blood and of strangled creatures is forbidden. To these commands they actually do not conform, for they unscrupulously eat of both these forbidden articles.

Chapter 17: Israel to have no restoration from current exile (Lev 26:42)

Some Christian divines have asserted that the curses pronounced in Leviticus 26:42, relate to the destruction of the first temple, and are therefore accompanied by the consoling words, "And I shall remember the covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham I shall remember, and I shall remember the land." In the same light they view the passage, "And I shall remember unto them the first covenant that I brought them out of Egypt before the eyes of the Gentiles to be their God, I am the Lord." The Christians refer these topics to the remembrance of the second temple, and the redemption is said to allude to the captivity of Babel; but the subsequent curses contained in Deuteronomy 28 are referred to the demolition of the second temple, and hence are unaccompanied by consolatory words as Israel is to have no restoration from this exile.

Refutation:—Scripture does not authorize the supposition that the first-mentioned curses refer to the destruction of the first temple only; the warnings contained in Leviticus with regard to the first covenant, though materially and principally referring to the first temple in which the captivity commenced, include, also, the destruction of the second temple and the afflictions suffered by Israel in the present captivity. At the same time we perceive that the curses contained in Deuteronomy mention facts relating exclusively to the first destruction. Among the maledictions mentioned in Leviticus 26:31, we read, "And I shall destroy your sanctuaries," the latter word being in the plural must evidently be understood to include both the first and the second temple; nor can the word sanctuaries refer to palaces; since the passage in Leviticus goes on to say "And I shall not smell your sweet savours," therefore it naturally points to the sacrifices offered up in the sanctuaries. Thus also the curses contained in Deuteronomy 28:25, "The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies; thou shalt go out against them one way, and in seven ways thou shalt flee before them." This undoubtedly did not take place during the time of the second temple, for then the Jews prevailed, and the Romans suffered a total defeat, as is related by Joseph Ben Gurion. The Roman writers themselves acknowledge evidently this fact; the prophecy, however, was fulfilled

during the time of the first temple (see Isaiah 22:3) "All thy rulers are fled together, they were bound by the archers; all that were found in thee were bound together, which fled from a distance." Moreover, if we say there are two captivities, we must also say there are two redemptions, viz., the first already effected at the building of the second temple, and the second expected at a future period; and what man of sense can believe that the redemption of the second temple was a complete redemption, since the Ten Tribes did not join in the return to Jerusalem? There were only 42,360 men of Judah and Benjamin, who availed themselves of the permission given by Cyrus, king of Persia, while the majority still remained in Babylon. Nor can it be said that those who had returned to Jerusalem enjoyed full independence, for when settled there, they were tributary to the Medes and Persians, as is related in Nehemiah 9:36, "Behold, we are now servants, and the land which Thou hast given to our fathers to eat the fruit thereof and its goodly produce; behold, we are servants in it, and it yieldeth much increase to the kings who Thou hast set over us, because of our sins, and also they have dominion over our bodies," etc. Subsequently the cruelties experienced proceeded from the Greeks, and afterwards from the Romans. Though the Jews sometimes rebelled, and nominated their own kings, yet there was no ruler over them of the posterity of David, on whose house the scepter will devolve at the final restoration. The Asmoneans were of the tribe of Levi, and members of the priesthood; and they were succeeded by Herod and his descendants until the ruin of the second temple, as we have mentioned above.

The inferiority of the second temple may also be judged from the absence of the Ark, the Mercy-seat, the Cherubim, and the Urim, and the Thummin, and the Shechinah. The temple was deprived of the Shechinah (the manifestation of the divine presence); all the prophecies ceased, and the former miracles were no longer witnessed. Under these circumstances, how can it be asserted that Israel's redemption was complete? We must rather acknowledge, that the Lord excited compassion in the heart of Israel's conquerors, and awakened the mind of Cyrus to grant permission to the Jews to return to Jerusalem, to rebuild the temple, to serve the Lord, and to be freed from their bondage.

We thus see that the evil consequences of the original captivity still subsisted, at the return from Babylon; though Herod, after committing great bloodshed among the sages and pious of Israel, built a splendid and magnificent temple, yet it is not a matter of doubt that Herod was all the time subjected to the Romans, and held his throne under their authority. All this tends to show that the captivity continued from the day of the destruction of the first temple by Nebuchadnezzar until the present time. The apparent omission in Deuteronomy 28 of consolations and the like promises, as are held out in Leviticus at the close of the maledictions, can easily be explained, since in the former portion the words of the covenant are not

completed; for immediately after the denunciations, Moses assembled the Israelites to establish the covenant with them while they were standing before the Lord; hence we read in Deuteronomy 29:11 [29:12], "That thou shouldst enter into covenant with the Lord thy God and into his oath." Moses adds in this chapter the oaths of the covenant, in addition to what he impressed on them in the preceding chapter; then after laying before them the dread of the calamities, he subjoins the most emphatic consolation and promise of perfect redemption. See Deuteronomy 30:1, "And it shall come to pass when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations whither the Lord thy God has driven thee," (verse 2) "And shalt return unto the Lord thy God and shalt obey his voice, according to all I commanded thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thy heart and with all thy soul," (verse 3) "That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God has scattered thee." (verse 4) "If any of thine be driven out unto the utmost part of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee." (verse 5) "And the Lord thy God will bring thee unto the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it, and He will do thee good and multiply thee above thy fathers." Verse 6, "And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart and with all thy soul that thou mayst live." Verse 7, "And the Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies and on them that hate thee which prevented thee." Verse 8, "And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all the commandments which I command thee this day." Verse 9, "And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thy hand, and in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers." Verse 10, "If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God to keep His commandments and His statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul." Hence, we see that this prediction is awaiting fulfillment, since the particulars contained in the above quotation did not, during the time of the first or second temple, take place. At the same time, we discover in the said passages every consolation that hope can suggest, for it points out at once both our restoration and the redemption of our souls: a redemption which is the truest deliverance from all troubles, and the boon and summit of all human aspirations. The promise with regard to our future state far surpasses the promise given in Leviticus, which alludes merely to our political restoration. There is certainly a distant allusion to the divine regard and consideration of the second temple; yet, as full liberty never shone upon those who went up, as we have clearly and incontestably shown, we must necessarily conclude, that the curses, as contained in Deuteronomy,

will be succeeded by those superlative and extensive blessings which a future and universal restoration will produce for Israel.

Chapter 18: Torah concerns physical life only, not spiritual life nor afterlife

The Christians offer an objection against the divine law, by stating that the Mosaic code gave no promise to the faithful of bliss in a future state, but limited all reward and punishment solely to our existence here below. They refer us to the 26th chapter of Leviticus, and maintain that on this account no mention is made in the law or in the prophetic writings concerning the condition of the soul in a future state, and that all predictions relate only to worldly prosperity.

Refutation:—The divine law dwells in many passages on our reward in this world, man being a compound of matter and spirit; and agreeably to this division the divine commandments are likewise of a double character, some calling on our physical, others on our intellectual powers. Now, the fulfillment of our duties depends on the co-operation of body with mind. Our material state is open and manifest to all, while our spiritual condition remains imperceptible. On this account, Holy Writ treats with clearness and precision on the dispensations affecting our material condition, and touches but lightly upon those affecting the soul in a future state. We must here call attention to the forcible truth, that the uninterrupted enjoyment of peace and prosperity of our corporeal existence must ever be the prime object of our wishes, and the benevolent design of the Almighty. It is only in the tranquil untroubled state of the body that man has an opportunity to devote himself fully and entirely to the faithful performance of the divine behests. When struggling with malady, or suffering from hunger, or laboring under any bodily affliction, it becomes impossible for us to fulfill many of our religious duties. The law, therefore, holds out the reward to its pious followers, that their bodies shall be free from trouble and disease, so that they may be enabled to conform to the Holy Will of the Almighty, and thereby prepare the soul for eternal bliss. We see clearly in Leviticus (26:11 and 12), that the law, after promising temporal happiness, adds also the boon of spiritual welfare. See *ibid.*, "And I shall place my residence among you; and my soul shall not abhor you, and I shall walk among you, and I will be your God, and you shall be unto me a people." Thus was also promised to Abraham and his posterity worldly success for the performance of the covenant. Spiritual reward is indicated by the following passage in Genesis 17:7, "I will be unto thee a God, and to thy seed after thee." In the same chapter (verse 8) the gracious addition is made, "And I shall be unto them a God." The patriarch Jacob, too, when concluding his vow by saying (Genesis 28:21), "And the Lord will be unto me a God," alluding to spiritual welfare,

as every thinking man must acknowledge. Not in this portion alone, but throughout the whole law, we meet with a variety of passages bearing reference to the ultimate destination of man, especially where God's immediate influence and supervision over the conduct are expressed.

The very ceremonial observances ordered in the law, and the whole temple service had no other purpose than to bring the worshipper near the Throne of Mercy, and to purify and to prepare the soul for a more exalted state. The closeness with which God, by His covenant, has bound unto himself the people of Israel, is the reason He called them "His first-born son," "His chosen one," "His friend," "His beloved," "His holy one," "His portion," and "The bond of His heritage." The epithet, סְגֻלָּה (Segulah), commonly rendered "peculiar people," has occasionally the signification of any object peculiarly precious and valuable. This interpretation of the foregoing Hebrew word is confirmed in Ecclesiastes 2:8. The announcement of Divine Grace, or favor, our lawgiver, Moses, communicated to Israel by denominating them "Children of the Almighty," who are beloved by their Father in Heaven, attached to Him in their present state, and not separated from Him in the life to come. We refer the reader to Deuteronomy 14:1-2, "Ye are the children of the Lord your God; ye shall not cut yourselves nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead. For thou art a holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord has chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto Himself above all the nations that are upon the earth."

The tendency of these passages, is to teach that it is unbecoming to indulge in excess of grief on account of the death of the body, since it is declared that Israel is a nation holy to the Lord and chosen by Him. By the word chosen, we understand that the soul is destined to adhere to Him and to enjoy His presence for ever. If earthly distinctions were intended to be the sole purport of human existence, death would be a more severe visitation on the rich than on the poor. Another allusion to a future state, we must refer to Leviticus 18:5, "Ye shall, therefore, keep my statutes and my judgments, which if a man do he shall live in them, I am the Lord." It cannot be imagined that this relates to longevity on earth, for we do not find that the pious, who observe the divine law, prolong their existence here below, beyond those who transgress; the passage, therefore, necessarily refers to immortal life.

The opinion of the opponents of Judaism is that the first man, through his rebellion against the word of God, was condemned to spiritual death. They rest their argument on the passage in Genesis 2:17, "For on the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die," which death they deem to be that of the soul. Now, by comparing this passage with the preceding quotation, we cannot avoid the conclusion that the curse of Adam will have no effect on those who faithfully obey the divine ordinances set forth in the Mosaic law. We refer the reader, also, to the 5th

chapter of St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans, which forcibly corroborates our argument; a careful perusal of the following words, from Deuteronomy 32:46-47, will likewise justify the view here taken: "Set your hearts unto all the words which I testify among you this day, which ye shall command your children to observe, to do all the words of this law, for it is not a vain thing for you, because it is for your life; and through this thing you shall prolong your days on the earth," etc. Here, two different rewards obtainable through observance of the Divine Law are held out to man. There is a spiritual reward and a temporal reward. Concerning the spiritual, Scripture says, "For it is your life;" and concerning the temporal reward, we read, "And through this thing you shall prolong your days on the earth." The welfare of the soul, on account of its surpassing value, is mentioned first, though in reality it is the last lot of man. Another allusion to the reward of eternal life is made in Deuteronomy 33:29, in the very last words recorded in the speech of Moses, "Happy art thou, O Israel, who is like unto thee a people saved by the Lord?" This verse conveys the idea that worldly acquisitions, such as dominion, power, conquest and increased wealth do not constitute true happiness, because they can be shared by nations who do not acknowledge God; for true happiness is spiritual salvation, of which no people have been declared worthy excepting the people of Israel, as we perceive in the words, "Happy art thou, O Israel; who is like unto thee, a people saved by the Lord?" A truth confirmed in the words which follow, He is "the shield of thy help," seem to convey the idea, that the boon of spiritual blessings does not exclude temporal happiness; and that those who devote themselves to the Lord, find also their protection in Him in the time of need. The same idea is expressed in the words of the Psalmist "Trust in the Lord, He is your salvation and shield." The divine interposition is further illustrated in the sequel of the verse under consideration (viz. Deuteronomy 33:29), where we see "The shield of thy help," and "Who is the sword of thy glory;" showing, as the Psalmist says, "That not by their own swords they inherited the land."

A reference to the punishment of the soul is made in Leviticus 22:3; "Say unto them according to your generations, every man of your seed who shall approach to the sanctuary which the Children of Israel shall sanctify unto the Lord while his impurity is upon him, that soul shall be cut off from before me; I am the Lord." The words "from before me" relate to the soul which originates from a holy source, and to which it will return if found worthy. A similar allusion to the soul is made, *ibid.* 23:29; "For whatsoever soul it be that shall not be afflicted on the self-same day shall be cut off from her people;" and again, "and every soul which shall do any work on the self-same day, that soul shall I cause to be lost in the midst of her people;" that is to say: she shall not be gathered to the souls of the pious who are denominated "her people." Thus, we find in Genesis 25:8, "And he was gathered unto his people;" that is to say: he was gathered to, and associated with the spirits of pious and Godly men. We will give a further proof that scripture does not treat here on the mere body;

for in Deuteronomy 32:50, we read, "And thou shalt be gathered unto thy people, as Aaron thy brother died in the mountain Hor, and was gathered unto his people." Thus, we see that the term gathering applies exclusively to the soul. In like manner, Isaiah 58:8, "The glory of the Lord gathereth thee in." Balaam, though a Gentile prophet, perceiving by the power of his vision that the Israelites not only stood in this world under the special supervision of the Almighty, but had also a blissful end and rich hope after their death; he therefore prayed for himself to be deemed worthy of participating in their spiritual bliss in a future state. See Numbers 23:10, "May I die the death of the righteous, and my last end be as his."

The theme of beatitude of the soul is constantly reverted to by David in his Psalms, and is the incentive for keeping the commandments of the Divine law, and of pouring forth prayers for its attainment. See Psalm 19:8 [19:7], "The law of the Lord is perfect, restoring the soul." Psalm 27:13, "Unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living." Psalm 116:8-9, "For Thou savest my soul from death, my eye from tears, my foot from stumbling; I shall walk before the Lord in the land of the living." Psalm 26:9, "Do not gather in my soul with the sinners." Psalm 16:10-11, "For Thou wilt not leave my soul in the grave; Thou wilt not let thy pious men see corruption; Thou makest me know the path of life; fullness of joy is in thy countenance; delights are at thy right hand for ever." Psalm 49:16 [49:15], "But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave, for He will take me, Selah." Psalm 25:12-13, "Who is the man who feareth the Lord, him shall He teach in the way he should choose, his soul shall abide in bliss, and his seed shall inherit the earth." Psalm 31:20 [31:19], "How great is thy goodness which Thou hast preserved for those who fear Thee." Psalm 36:8-10 [36:7-9], "How precious is Thy mercy, O God, and the children of men shall be protected under the shadow of Thy wings; they shall be satisfied with the fatness of Thy house, and Thou shalt give them drink from the stream of Thy delights, for with Thee is the source of life; in Thy light we shall see light." Psalm 73:25, "Who will be for me in Heaven, if I delight not to be with Thee on earth?" And various other passages of like description occur throughout the Psalms. Solomon, the son of this sublime poet, has enlarged on the beautiful representation of the Heavenly fruit: he says in Ecclesiastes 3:21, "Who knoweth the spirit of man which rises on high?" and *ibid.* 12:7, "And the dust goeth to the earth as it was, and the spirit returneth to God who gave it:" and Proverbs 11:7, "When the wicked man dies, hope is lost, and the expectation of his exertions is lost." *Ibid.* 14:32, "The wicked man is driven away by his own evil doings; but the righteous man confideth even in his death." And *ibid.* 23:17-18, "Let thy heart not envy the sinner, but abide in the fear of the Lord the whole day; for surely there is a hereafter, and thy hope shall not be cut off." And *ibid.* 24:14, "Know, then, that wisdom is equally good for thy soul if thou findest it; and there is a hereafter, and thy hope

shall not be cut off." See also Isaiah 45:17, where he says: "Israel is saved by the Lord with an everlasting salvation," etc. A parallel phrase occurs in the words of Moses, Deuteronomy 33:29, viz.: "Happy art thou, O Israel, who is like unto thee?"

This implies that the spiritual salvation is not a transitory boon, but an everlasting benefit; therefore Isaiah says, in chapter 45:17, "Ye shall not be abashed and not be ashamed through eternity." Isaiah remarks, on the death of a penitent man (chapter 57:18) "I saw his ways and I healed him, and led him to his repose, and I bestowed comfort on him and on his mourners." The words, "And I saw his ways and I healed him," clearly indicate the spiritual healing, that is, the pardon for iniquity. To the same effect we read in Psalm 41:5 [41:4], "Heal my soul, for I have sinned unto Thee." Also in Isaiah 6:10, "And he shall return and be healed," (which means after the expiation of his sins). "I shall lead him to his destination, and thereby bestow comfort upon him, and also to his mourners," who will derive consolation from the knowledge that after his death he will partake of that happiness which is reserved for the pious in the world of souls. The grant of a glorious reward of the pious is alluded to in Isaiah 58:8, "Then thy light shall break forth like the morning dawn, and thy healing shall spring forth speedily, and thy righteousness shall go before thee, and the glory of thy God shall gather thee, viz., into the place of happiness where the souls of the righteous are received in the bond of endless life." The term light applies to the existence of the soul in the region of spirits, where it enjoys immortal bliss in the presence of the Lord. This is further illustrated by what Abigail said to David (1 Samuel 25:29), "And the soul of my lord shall be bound up in the bond of the living with the Lord thy God;" on the other hand she says, with regard to the spiritual punishment of the wicked, "And the soul of thine enemies He shall cast away as from a sling." And Ezekiel says (18:21), "The wicked man who turneth away from all his sins which he hath committed, and observeth all my statutes and does judgment and righteousness, he shall surely live;" and further, "When the wicked man returneth from the wickedness which he hath committed; and shall do judgment and righteousness, he shall live with his soul." "When he turneth from all his transgressions, he shall surely live and not die." And 20:11, "And I gave to them my statutes, and my judgments are made known to them which if a man doeth he shall live in them." It is perfectly obvious that the prophet speaks of everlasting life wherein no death can occur, and which may justly be denominated true existence with regard to the future state. Elihu says (Job 33:30), "To bring back his soul from perdition to shine in the light of the living." The prophet, Zechariah speaks on that subject in chapter 3:7, "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, if thou wilt walk in my ways and keep my observances, and judge also my house and guard my court, I will give thee ingress among those who are standing here," (the ministering Angels.) This promise manifestly

shows that the soul, after being freed from the body, obtains a blissful habitation in the world of spirits. We may also quote the words of Daniel 12:2, "And many of those who sleep in dust shall awake, some for eternal life and some to shame and everlasting contempt, and they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they who promote righteousness shall be as stars for ever and ever."

The above verses found in the law, in the Prophets and in the Hagiography form a sufficiency for our faith in spiritual rewards and punishments hereafter. There are many other passages to be met with in the Divine Law and the Prophets, affording additional evidence of the immorality of the soul.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 19: Torah was temporary, abrogated by Jesus' new law

Many Christians oppose us with the opinion that the Mosaic Law had not been established for a permanent, but only for a limited period, and was totally abrogated by Jesus, who bequeathed to his disciples and followers a new law which dispensed them from conforming to the ancient statutes and ordinances laid down in the Mosaic code. For (they allege) according to the old law, they (the Israelites) had been given over to the power of death, while the new dispensation was a law of grace and easy to practice. The commandments given, they say, were so rigorous that no man could observe them properly. Hence it came that the fundamental laws, such as circumcision and the observances of the Sabbath, were but temporary, and continued only to the time of the coming of Jesus the Nazarene, who immediately substituted baptism instead of circumcision, and the consecration of the first day instead of the seventh.

Refutation:—This statement of the Christians is fallacious. The Gospel itself refutes their opinion, for in Matthew 5:17-20, Jesus says to his disciples, "Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets; I am not come to destroy but to fulfill; for verily I say unto you, till Heaven and earth pass one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law till all is fulfilled;" "Whosoever, therefore, shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of Heaven; but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of Heaven."

The Christians themselves must admit that Jesus and his Apostles were circumcised; for we find that Paul circumcised his disciple, Timotheus, as is recorded in the Acts 16:3, which fact proves, according to their own statement, that the law was not abolished even after the

existence of Jesus. The seventh day was also kept sacred by the founders of the Christian religion and its disciples. The Sabbath was observed (the translator refers to the book of Feasts and Fasts published 1825) for nearly 500 years after the vulgar era, when one of the Popes instituted the sanctification of the first day of the week instead of the proper Sabbath-day. See the record thereon in Zemach David.

The seventh day is not merely instituted as a ceremonial law, prescribing to us cessation of all labor, but is to be held universally sacred by the express word of the Almighty, "Remember the Sabbath-day to keep it holy," Exodus 20:8. See also *ibid* 16:29, "Behold the Lord giveth you the Sabbath; therefore He giveth you, on the sixth day, food for two days." The supply of manna during the six days of the week, and the allotment of double the quantity on the sixth day afford a miraculous confirmation of the sanctity of the Sabbath.

Therefore the Divine Ordinance of the Sabbath cannot be abrogated; more especially as this command is included in the Decalogue, the authority of which is acknowledged by all followers of Christianity. It appears, however, that the Christians have been anxious to abolish the law of Moses on their own accord and responsibility, for they have no authority whatever for doing so from Jesus and the Apostles. If Jesus had really absolved them from the commandments contained in our Bible, wherefore did he urge the observance of a part of them; as, for instance, the honor due to parents, neighborly love and charity? Wherefore did he warn them against homicide, adultery, theft, and false testimony? See Matthew 19. On what foundation rests the Apostle's prohibition to abstain from idolatry, incest, and eating of blood and strangled animals? (See Acts 15:20.) Nor can we comprehend the assertion that the law of Moses must discontinue because the Israelites had been guilty of death according to it, but not according to the law of Jesus, which was called the law of Grace. Did not Paul order the death of one marrying his father's wife? (See 1 Corinthians 5:1). Even at the present day, Christians inflict death on the murderer, the adulterer, and the thief (translator's note: This was perfectly true at the date when the author wrote.); while, according to the Mosaic dispensation, pecuniary thefts were not punished with death. See Exodus 21:16, where it is said "He who stealeth man and selleth him, he shall be put to death," etc. Equally untrue is it that the law of Jesus is more easy to practice than that of Moses. In Matthew 19:21, we find, "If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor." The same is repeated in Luke 18:22. This shows that it is required by the laws of Jesus, that man shall dispose of his property and devote it to charitable purposes; the law of Moses, however, decrees that only the tenth part of the harvest shall go for charitable purposes, and the remainder be enjoyed by the owner. This proves that the legislative system of Moses is by no means oppressive; but on the contrary, serves to benefit both the body and the soul. Again, if men have been dispensed

from obedience to the laws of Moses, why do they acknowledge some of the laws on consanguinity, and prohibit intercourse between the following six degrees of affinity, namely, with the mother, the father's wife, the sister, the brother's wife, the daughter, and the son's wife? With regard to other relations they are not guided by the Divine enactments transmitted to us through Moses; but occasionally they permit the unlawful, and forbid the legitimate degrees of intermarriage.

The Christians seem here to abandon the solid foundation on which we rest our hopes, and act from self-formed opinions. The Gospel presents no express code on the points in question, and if these laws are no longer valid which determine the relationship of consanguinity, why did not Jesus introduce new regulations in lieu of the laws of Moses? In modern days the Christians are partly guided by the Mosaic code, and partly by human enactments at various periods. They make changes and alterations, accommodating them to the customs of the day, and render established principles subservient to temporary wants and arbitrary innovations. Convinced, as we Israelites are, that the divine revelation proceeds from Infinite Wisdom, and is, therefore, in itself complete and perfect in its aim, we cannot possibly admit of any change, deviation, addition, or diminution. Holy Writ warns us on this point. Deuteronomy 4:2, "Every word which I command you ye shall observe and do. Thou shalt not add unto it, and not diminish therefrom." Further (Deuteronomy 4:8), "Where is a nation so great which has such just and righteous statutes as all this law which I place before you this day?" Ibid, "If thou wilt obey the voice of the Lord thy God to observe His commandments and His statutes which are written in this book of this law," etc. In the same book (Deuteronomy 33:4) we read, "The law that Moses commanded unto us is an inheritance of the congregation of Jacob." To this we add the words of the Psalmist (Psalm 19:8-10 [19:7-9]), "The law of the Lord is perfect, restoring the soul; the testimony of the Lord is faithful, making wise the foolish; the statutes of the Lord are just, rejoicing the heart; the commandments of the Lord are pure, enlightening the eyes; the fear of the Lord is clean, standing forever; the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether." In the same book (Psalm 119:44) he says, "And I will keep thy commandments for ever and ever." We refer also to the conclusion of the prophecy by Malachi, who says, "Remember ye the law of my servant Moses which I commanded him in Horeb, concerning all Israel (giving them), statutes and judgments." These verses give satisfactory evidence, that the divine law in its sublime perfection and simplicity is not to be enlarged or curtailed, and much less to be abrogated and superseded by any other code. The immutability of the law is pronounced in Deuteronomy 28:1, "And thou shalt listen to the voice of the Lord, and do all His commandments which I command thee this day." The same is repeated in a subsequent passage, it being said, "If thou wilt but listen to

the voice of the Lord thy God to observe His commandments which are written in the book of this law."

This manifestly proves that the gracious promises and assurances will only be realized provided we rigidly follow the precepts prescribed in the books of Moses. The expression, "this day," points out the impossibility of a subsequent legislation, and the unchangeableness of the revealed Will of the Almighty. In a like manner, we learn from the passage, "The law which Moses commanded us," is an inheritance of the congregation of Jacob; that, contrary to the Christian belief, no period whatever has been assigned to limit the duration of the Mosaic code. The law of Moses is to remain an everlasting inheritance to the congregation of Jacob forever. "For it shall not be forgotten out of the mouth of his seed." The term, "congregation of Jacob," (instead of house or seed of Jacob), shows that the law is not merely an inheritance to the children of Jacob but to all who may congregate with them, "from the sons of the stranger, who join themselves to the Lord to serve Him, and to love the name of the Lord, and to be His servants. Every one that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of my covenant." "They shall," as Isaiah says (Isaiah 14:1), "be joined with them, and be included in the house of Jacob." The expression, "All His commandments are sure, they stand fast for ever and ever," is no less an evidence of the eternity of the laws contained in the Pentateuch, as לְעֹלָם ("for ever"), and לְעֹלָם לְעֹלָם ("eternally"), imply an uninterrupted and endless course of time. We meet with an unmistakable use of the two words in the Psalm 148:6, "And He has established them for ever and ever, He has given an ordinance and it shall not be infringed." The passage, "And I will keep Thy commandments continually for ever and ever," alludes to a period unlimited by time. In accordance with this, we find in Exodus 15:18, the words יְהוָה יִמְלֹךְ לְעֹלָם וָעֶד "The Lord shall rule for ever and ever." So likewise in the exhortation of the last of the prophets (Malachi 3:22 [4:4]), "Remember ye the law of Moses, which I commanded unto him on Horeb, concerning all Israel (giving him statutes and judgments)," we discover that there will never be any other law besides the law given unto Moses on Mount Sinai. We likewise meet with the Gentile authorities, who state that the law of God given to Israel is eternal and perfect – that no succeeding law has ever been given – that those are mistaken who assert that Moses gave the first and Jesus the second law – and that Jesus gave no new law, but merely confirmed the commandments given through Moses. Thus in all these doctrinal points they are found to agree with us.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 20: Jesus gave a new law, prophesied by Isaiah 2:3 and Isaiah 51:4

"And many nations shall go and say, Come let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob, and He shall teach us in His ways, and we will walk in His paths, for out of Zion shall go forth the law and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem" (Isaiah 2:3). This verse is combined by the Christians with that in Isaiah 51:4: "Hearken unto me, O my people, and give ear unto me, O my nation, for a law shall proceed from me, and I will make my judgment for a light of the people." They deduce from it that Isaiah here prophesied that there would be a future covenant, viz., the law of Jesus; the law of Moses having been delivered on Sinai, while the new doctrine of Jesus was promulgated in Zion.

Refutation:—The preceding chapter disproves this assertion, we having therein established on incontestable testimony, that the law of Moses is not to be revoked, and that no second revelation is to be added to the former; therefore no inference or support can be derived from the above texts. The verses quoted do by no means declare that a new law was to be given by the Almighty, but that the תּוֹרָה which means instruction and improvement, shall go forth from Zion, and shall be communicated through the advent of the true expected Messiah. Hence, they shall say, "And he shall instruct us in his ways, and we will walk in his paths." The King Messiah is to be the Instructor. In allusion to him, the prophet says, "And he shall judge among the Gentiles." A passage relating to this we read in Isaiah 42:1, "Behold the servant on whom I shall rely, for he as judge and a teacher, shall carry out judgment among the Gentiles, and they shall wait for his instruction." A parallel promise is given in the words, "For the law [i.e. instruction] shall proceed from me, and I will make my judgment rest as the light of Nations." The beneficent activity of the King Messiah is further exhibited in the prediction (Isaiah 2:4), "And they shall strike their swords into ploughshares," etc.

This justifies the expectation that, in cases where otherwise wars arising from strife and contention would occur, appeals will be made to the King Messiah, who will rule over all nations, and decide which party is in the right, and which in the wrong. Thus, he will establish peace between them, and thus prevent warfare between nations. The destructive instruments of battle will no longer be required, but will be converted into implements of husbandry. "Their swords shall be struck into ploughshares, their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall no longer lift up sword against nation, and they shall no longer learn the art of war." We acquire by this prophecy a manifest assurance that the law which is to proceed from the Messiah is nothing else but the instruction and propagation of the most humane principles. The Hebrew word תּוֹרָה is very frequently used for conveying the idea of instruction." See

Proverbs 1:8, "My son, hear the instruction of thy father, and forsake not the laws (or teaching) of thy mother." Further, *ibid* 3:1, "My son, forget not my laws (teachings), and let thine heart keep my precepts." And in the same chapter, "for I give you a good doctrine: do not forsake my laws" (i.e. instructions). No person will venture to assert, that King Solomon alluded to any new law, written by himself, or any of his contemporaries. Controversial opponents, themselves, must acknowledge, that the word תּוֹרָה in the Book of Proverbs has no other meaning but worldly uninspired instruction; and the inference deducible from this interpretation, with regard to the passage under discussion, is so obvious, that it leaves no ground for vindicating the existence of a new law, subsequent to the one given by Moses.

Chapter 21: Isaiah's prophecy of the virgin birth (Isaiah 7:14)

Isaiah 7:14, "Therefore the Lord shall give unto you a sign; behold, the young woman is with child, and she will bear a son, and she will call his name Emanuel" (God is with us). This verse is applied by the Christians as an evidence of their faith. The prophet, they say, predicted here, that an Israelitish virgin would conceive, and bare a son (Jesus) under the influence of the Holy Ghost, as is related in the Gospel of Matthew.

Refutation:—This assertion rests solely on the support of imagination. The word לְמָהּ (young woman) used in the verse, does not mean a virgin, as they maintain, but signifies merely young woman. See Genesis 24:14, where Abraham's servant says, first, "And there shall be a damsel נַעֲרָה to whom I say," etc.: and afterwards, he says, "and there shall be a young woman לְמָהּ who cometh out to draw water," etc. Both נַעֲרָה and לְמָהּ can be applied either to a maiden or a married woman. With regard to a maiden, we find in Genesis 24:28, "the young woman run and told her father's household:" and, in Ruth 2:5, "To whom belongeth this young woman?" (נַעֲרָה). In the same way, we meet with the word לְמָהּ meaning simply young female: for instance, Exodus 2:8, "And the young woman went and called the mother of the child." As we express in Hebrew נַעֲרָה and לְמָהּ indiscriminately for a virgin or a married woman, so we apply, respecting a young man, both נַעֲרָה and לְמָהּ. See 1 Samuel 17:58, "Whose son is this lad?" (נַעֲרָה). And in the same chapter, verse 56, "Whose son is this young man?" (נַעֲרָה). The age of adolescence is likewise expressed both by נַעֲרָה and לְמָהּ. See Isaiah 54:4, "and thou shalt forget the shame of נַעֲרָה thy youth." And Jeremiah 31:19, "and the disgrace of נַעֲרָה my youth." This proves, that the female in minor age, whatever her state may be, is denominated alike by נַעֲרָה or לְמָהּ in the same manner as the young

man in minor years is styled עַלְמָה or נַעֲרָה . The wife of Isaiah, who was still youthful, is termed in Scripture, עַלְמָה young woman. Moreover, the sense of the chapter is altogether adverse to the exposition of the Christians. It refers to Ahaz, King of Judah, who had been in great trouble and consternation on account of the confederacy which the monarchs (Pekah, King of Israel, and Rezin, King of Syria,) had determined on, namely, to besiege and subjugate Jerusalem. See Isaiah 7:2, "And it was told to the House of David, saying, Syria is confederate with Ephraim; and his heart was moved, and the heart of the people, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind." Hence, the Lord sent to him the prophet Isaiah, to give him courage, that his heart should not be dismayed at their approach—since their design would assuredly be frustrated. To convince him of this, the Almighty gave him a sign, or token that Jerusalem would remain unmolested, and that the territories of Samaria and Damascus would soon be abandoned and deserted. Had it been the purpose of inspired writ to announce, as the Christians maintain, the advent of Jesus, how could Ahaz be concerned in a sign that could only be realized many centuries after his death, or how could any promise cheer his heart that was not to be fulfilled in his own days? It is true, there is also a prophecy, in this chapter, relating to calamities suspended over the hostile kings, and which happened within sixty-five years subsequent to the existing danger; "For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus is Rezin; and within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be no people." But the computation of sixty-five years did not commence from the date of the prophecy. At the period when the prophet spoke, his young wife was pregnant, and bore a son, who was first called Emanuel (God is with us), and afterwards, Maher-shalal-hash-baz (speed the plunder, hasten the spoil). "For," says Isaiah, "before the boy shall know how to call father and mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the King of Assyria." The fulfillment of this event is thus recorded in 2 Kings 16:9, "And the King of Assyria hearkened unto him, and the King of Assyria went up against Damascus, and took it, and carried the captives to Kir, and slew Rezin." In the same book (15:29-30) the fate of Pekah, King of Israel, is described in the following words. "In the days of Pekah, the son of Remaliah, King of Israel, came to Tiglath-Pileser, King of Assyria, and took Ijon, and Abel-Beth Maachah, and Janoah, and Kedeth, and Hazor, and Gilead, and Galilee, all the land of Naphtali, and carried them captive to Assyria." Verse 30, "And Hosea, the son of Elah, made a conspiracy against Pekah, the son of Remaliah, and smote him, and slew him, and reigned in his stead, in the twentieth year of Jotham, the son of Uzziah." The word of the prophet Isaiah $\text{בְּיָמֵי שִׁשְּׁׁנֵי עָשָׂר}$ "within sixty-five years," is to be understood, as at the completion of these years, counted from the time of the prophecy of Amos, who predicted, concerning Damascus (in his book, 1:5), "And I will break the bolt of Damascus, and cut off

the inhabitants of the valley, and even the support of the scepter from Beth-Eden, and the people of Syria shall go into captivity into Kir, saith the Lord." About Israel, the same prophet predicted (ibid 7:11), "And Israel shall be exiled from its territory." Hence it appears, that before three years had elapsed after this announcement, the Syrians, and many of the Israelites, with the Kings, Rezin and Pekah, were carried into captivity to Assyria. In the twentieth year of Jotham, which was the fourth of Ahaz, Hosea, the son of Elah, killed Pekah, the son of Remaliah, and reigned in his stead.

There is here a variation of statements with regard to these event, twenty years being ascribed to the government of Jotham, while subsequently it is mentioned that the occupation of the throne only lasted sixteen years, so that the four additional years must be considered to belong to the reign of his son Ahaz. We reconcile this discrepancy by the view, that, Ahaz having been a wicked king, Scripture prefers adverting to the departed pious King Jotham than to the reigning monarch, the ungodly Ahaz. Thus the sixty-five years expired in the ninth year of Hosea, the son of Elah, when the complete exile of all Israel took place. The following calculation will show the historical connection between the prophecy and its fulfillment. Amos prophesied two years before the earthquake, which occurred in the seventeenth year of the reign of Jeroboam, the son of Joash, King of Israel. This king ruled twenty-four years after the earthquake. Then Menahem governed twelve, Pekahiah two, Pekah twenty, and Hosea nine years, which make together the sum of sixty-five years. The seven months of the reign of Zechariah and Shalum are omitted from the calculation, being included in the years of the other kings. This calculation has been adopted by several Christian authors. If our opponents should ask who the young woman was to whom Isaiah alluded when he said, "She is with child, and shall bear a son;" we reply, that she was (as we have before asserted) the prophet's wife. This is proved by Isaiah 8:3, "And I came to the prophetess, and she conceived and bare a son; and the Lord said unto me, Call his name Maher-shalal-hash-baz." The question may then arise, How could he be called so after the name Emanuel had been previously given to him to afford a sign to Ahaz? We answer, by showing that the child received not two but three names, in consideration of the three kings concerned in the prophecy. Referring to the King of Judah he was named Emanuel (God is with us), to indicate that from the time of his birth peace would prevail in Judea.

Alluding to the King of Israel, he was called Maher-shalal, and in allusion to the King of Syria he received the name of Hash-baz, pointing out by the two latter names, that those monarchs, with all their possessions, would soon become the spoil of the Assyrian Kings. The two names are of a synonymous character, and in perfect accordance with each other. Therefore the prophet says, shortly after mentioning Emanuel (7:16), "for before the child shall

know to refuse the evil and choose the good, the land that thou abhorrest shall be forsaken of both the kings." In the same style he repeats after the name of Maher-shalal-hash-baz, "For before the child shall have knowledge to call, My father and my mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the King of Assyria." Seeing that these two verses are in perfect consonance with each other, the child spoken of must needs be the very same, and he being the son of Isaiah, stands a sign and token to these three kings. The intention to express several events by giving several names to one individual, is evident from the double appellation.

Shear Jashub (i.e. a remainder shall return) is an illustration of the ten tribes who are to remain in their captivity, while the two united tribes of Judah and Benjamin were to return from Babylon to Jerusalem at the expiration of the seventy years. On that account the prophet said, after the second son had been born unto him, "Here I stand, and the children which God has given me for signs and tokens in Israel;" and for this purpose only the Almighty bid him meet Ahaz, accompanied by his son Shear Jashub. Though the latter son was then but very young, his two names with opposite meanings stood as tokens for the future destiny of Ephraim (the ten tribes) on the one hand, and of Judah on the other.

R. David Kimchi has given a forced interpretation to the passage on Emanuel; believing that this individual was not the son of Isaiah, but of the king. The prophet expressing himself (chapter 8:8), "And the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Emanuel;" our expositor supposes, that the possessive, thy, could not have been addressed to a person who was not a son of the ruler of the country. But this conclusion is, to me, quite unfounded. We find, frequently, אֶרֶץ (thy land), meaning thy native land, or country. See, for instance, Genesis 12:1, "And the Lord spake unto Abraham, go out of thy land." Now, it is well known, that Abraham was not the lord of the land which he was ordered to quit; but that the word his land could only be applied to it inasmuch as it was the land of his birth. See also Jeremiah 12:15, "And I shall bring them back, every man to his heritage, and every man to his land." Moreover, suppose Emanuel was the son of a king, how could the land of Israel have been called his country, since he did not succeed his father in the government? It appears to me, that when Isaiah prophesied, saying, "Behold, the woman is with child," he was not aware that he spoke about his own wife – just as Samuel was not conscious that he prophesied concerning David, when he said to Saul, 1 Samuel 13:14, "The Lord has sought unto Himself a man after His own heart, and has appointed him prince over His people." Further, when Samuel said (chapter 15:28), "The Lord has torn away from thee the kingdom of Israel, and has given it to thy neighbor, who is better than thee;" for being at the house of Jesse, he knew which of the sons he was to anoint for the kingdom; so that when remarking to Eliab, he

exclaimed, "Surely, the Lord's anointed is before Him;" but only when he came to David, then the Lord told him to anoint him. With the same ignorance of things unrevealed, in the moments of inspiration, Isaiah prophesied on the young woman, until the token given him in the second prophecy rendered it manifest to him; the Lord saying then to him (chapter 8:1), "Take unto thee a large scroll, and write upon it with man's pen, Maher-shalal-hash-baz." After which Isaiah writes, "I took unto myself faithful witnesses; namely, Uriah, the priest, and Zechariah, the son of Jebarachiah; and I came near to the prophetess, and she conceived, and bare a son, and the Lord said unto me, Call his name Maher-shalal-hash-baz." It was necessary he should take faithful witnesses, in order to record all the minute parts of the Divine bidding, since he himself had to fulfill all.

Scripture introduces the words, "And it was told to the House of David," instead of to "Ahaz," etc. We account for this by the fact, that Ahaz was a wicked man; and it was thought proper, therefore, to indicate that the miracle did not occur for the merit of this king, but for the merit of his ancestor. The disputant may ask, "In what did, then, the sign and miracle consist, if the prophet predicted merely that a married woman would conceive and bear a son?" We reply, that the sign and the miracle, undeniably, consisted in the assurance of an event that could not be foreseen and foretold by a profane man. Conception and birth do not depend on human will; and many an infant is born that never sees the light: nor can we know whether the mother will give birth to a son or a daughter. Another miracle is, the prediction that the mother of the new-born child would call it Emanuel; and this prediction fulfilled, vouches for the truth of the additional prophecy, that Judah and Jerusalem would be saved from the attack of two belligerent kings. Again, it is a miracle, that the child, after its birth, was not to suck from the breasts of its mother, like other sucklings, but would feed on butter and honey. See Isaiah 7:15, "Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and to choose the good." This fare, and the abstaining from mother's milk shall endow him with knowledge to avoid the evil and to prefer the good, and make him excel all other children in intellect. The activity of free agency is to commence with him as soon as he can call father and mother-which renders him pre-eminent among other children of his age. The confirmation of this event is in chapter 8 of Isaiah.

The Christians maintain, that if that child had been born from the young woman like other children of men, his name could not have been called Emanuel (God is with us): but that this name was quite applicable to Jesus, who was a compound of the Divine and human nature.

Refutation:—It is the Hebrew idiom to join the name of the Almighty to the proper names of men, and even to inanimate objects; for instance, Samuel, Zuriel, Uziel, Michael, Eliezer, Elijah, Isaiah, Zurishaddai, etc. In Genesis 33:20, an altar was called, "El-Elohe Israel" (i.e.,

God is the God of Israel). In Exodus 17:15, an altar is called, "The Lord is my banner." We find the application in Jeremiah 33:16, "The Lord is our righteousness." In Ezekiel 48:35, we find the expression, "The Lord is there," which is applied to Jerusalem, the Holy city, as a name which will be given to it at the time of the Messiah, when the glorious presence of the Almighty shall return to it. That, however, Jesus should be called by the name Emanuel is not affirmed by any passage of the Gospel. We only find in Matthew 1:20, that the angel said to Joseph in a dream, "Fear not to receive Mary thy wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost, and she shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Jesus (יְשׁוּעַ), for he shall save his people from their sins. Now, all this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emanuel," etc. It is further stated, "And Joseph took unto him Mary his wife, and knew her not until she had brought forth her first-born son, and she called his name Jesus." In Luke 2:21, we find, "And when the eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child he was called Jesus, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb." From this it appears that Emanuel was a different individual from Jesus, for Jesus was in no instance called Emanuel—as to the name Jesus, it was given to him by mere chance, there were many other Jews named Jesus. See Ezra 2, 3 and 10, and the 2nd book of Chronicles 31. The Jews spell Jesus יְשׁוּעַ, because the ׁ is omitted in the pronunciation of the Christians; but suppose the ׁ is to be retained, there is no inference deducible from that in favor of their faith, as Matthew tried to establish for the Christians, to apply the name of Jesus also to the son of Sirach, who wrote a book called Ecclesiasticus.

Our disputant may ask, Of whom did Isaiah prophesy in chapter 9:6 (9:7 in the English bible), when he said, "Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: on his shoulders shall be the government: and they shall call him Wonderful, Counselor, Almighty God, Father of Eternity, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of [his] government and peace there shall be no end [without end, Hebrew] upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom, to order it and to establish it with judgment and with justice, from henceforth even for ever"?

We give the following reply: Those passages refer to Hezekiah, King of Judah, during whose government Israel experienced, through a divine intercession, a signal deliverance from Sennacherib, King of Assyria, who had raised a siege against Jerusalem with an army of a hundred and eighty thousand valiant men. That this great miracle, namely, the fall of the camp of Sennacherib, referred to in the verses under consideration, was occasioned from the regard entertained by the Almighty for "the virtue of the child born unto us," and which, at the time of the prophecy,

was already "given unto us." For when Ahaz ascended the throne, Hezekiah had already attained his ninth year. The truth of this exposition is borne out by the verses antecedent and subjoined to the passage "for a child has been born unto us." The latter word of the 6th verse of the 9th chapter of Isaiah must be rendered thus: "And he who is Wonderful, a Counselor and Omnipotent God; a Father of Eternity, he called his (the child's) name Prince of Peace." The child born unto Ahaz is entitled the Prince of Peace because of the peace granted to Israel in the days of Hezekiah.

The preceding epithets are applied to the Almighty as indications of marvelous occurrences accompanying the life of Hezekiah, "God showed Himself Wonderful," causing for his (Hezekiah's) sake, the shade of the sundial to recede; as "Counselor," the Lord established his own designs, and frustrated those of Sennacherib; as "the Omnipotent God," He evinced His divine attribute by suddenly destroying the immense army of the invading king; as "Father of Eternity," and Ruler of time, who, according to His pleasure, adds to and diminishes from the life of mortals, He manifested His power by prolonging the life of Hezekiah for a period of fifteen years.

The opponent may object to the above translation, by pleading, that he finds in his version of Isaiah the verb (אָרְבָּךְ) in the passive, viz.: "and his name was called, and not, as we are supposed to read, אָרְבָּךְ taking the verb in the active form (he called his name), so that the epithets which follow apply to the child, whose name the Almighty called "Wonderful," etc.

We know well that Jerome has made a practice of accommodating Scripture to the notions of his own creed; and has endeavored to establish an authority for his belief in the Divinity of Jesus. All endeavors, however, have failed. Even after adopting the reading of Jerome, we should be entitled to assign the above epithets to Hezekiah, since we have already proved that the nature of the holy language allows application of the name of the Almighty to human beings, and even to inanimate objects, inclusively. To give to Jesus the above appellations is altogether incompatible with his own history. How can he claim the names "Wonderful" and "Counselor," when it is remembered, that one of his disciples frustrated his designs, and betrayed him to his enemies? How can he merit the title, "Powerful" or "Omnipotent God," who suffered an unnatural death? How can he be the "Father of Eternity," who did not attain even half of the natural period of human life? How can he be distinguished as the "Prince of Peace" whereas, no peace existed in his days: and as he himself asserted, by saying, "I am not come to bring peace into the earth, but the sword." The Christians avail themselves of the passage, "to the increase of government, and peace without end," to oppose us with the following question:—"If the intention of the prophet had been to prophesy an

earthly kingdom, how could he say that his (the king's) government would be without end?" We reply to this, that the expression, "without end," (לְעוֹלָם וָעֶד) is a mere figure of speech. We find, similarly, in Isaiah 2:7, "And his land was full of silver and gold, and there was no end to his treasures; and his land was full of horses, and there was no end to his chariots."

Thus we find, also, in Ecclesiastes 4:8, "There is One, and no second, and he has neither son nor brother; and there is no end to all his troubles." At the end of the above prophecy, Isaiah says, chapter 9:6, "On the throne of David, and over his kingdom." This passage is a clear refutation of the Christian doctrine of the Messiah, for Jesus never sat on the throne of David, and never ruled over Israel. Should they interpret the throne of David in a spiritual sense, we must declare that the throne of David never meant anything but in relation to terrestrial government. David sat on a real throne, and his kingdom was a positive reality. Scripture, therefore, treats of it here in that sense only, and does not allude to any visionary kingdom. The expression, to establish it, and support it, "in judgment and righteousness, now and for evermore," shows that his dominion—that is, the dynasty of David—will never perish. And though an interruption has occurred during the time of the captivity, the government, nevertheless, will in the days of the Messiah, return to the scion of David. See Ezekiel 37:25, "And they shall live in it, and their children, and their children's children, to eternity, and my servant David shall be prince over them for ever." This whole passage refers to the Messiah, as will be shown hereafter. Our opponents may remark, "How can the idea of eternity be understood from the words 'even for evermore,' if the government of the House of David ceased from the time of the captivity?" Our answer to this argument is, that an intermediate cessation destroys not the nature of the perpetual duration; for we find that the commandment of circumcision, was enjoined on the posterity of Abraham, as an everlasting covenant, (see Genesis 17:7), "And my covenant shall be in your flesh as an everlasting covenant;" and, nevertheless, the ceremonial was, from sanitary motives, discontinued during the whole period of the journey through the desert. When, however, the tribes had entered the Land of Promise, the practice of that covenant was resumed, and will remain in force, even in the days of the Messiah, as the Prophets have declared to us. See Isaiah 52:1, "Awake, awake! Put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thee the garments of thy glory, O Jerusalem, thou holy city, for there shall never more enter into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean." The prophet Ezekiel likewise says (chapter 44:9), "Thus saith the Lord God, Any son of an alien, of an uncircumcised heart and of uncircumcised flesh, shall not enter into my sanctuary." Another instance we find in the covenant which the Almighty made with Phineas to grant the high priesthood to him and his posterity for ever; a long suspension occurred among his posterity, for we learn that Eli, Abimelech, and Abiathar officiated as high priests, until

King Solomon ascended the throne; nevertheless that dignity reverted to the rightful party, viz., the descendants of Phineas (see 1 Kings 2:26); where it is related that Solomon deposed Abiathar, and placed Zadok in his office. The same is related in 1 Chronicles 29:22, "And Zadok they anointed to be priest" because he was of the lineage of Phineas; and though another interruption in the dignity of priesthood took place during the time of the captivity, it will be restored at the coming of the Messiah; and the words in Numbers 25:13, will be realized, "And it shall belong to him and to his seed after him as an everlasting priesthood." Ezekiel informs us on this point by telling us (chapter 44:15), "And the priests, the Levites, the children of Zadok, who observed the observances of my sanctuary, while the children of Israel strayed from me, they shall come nigh unto me." This prophecy is connected with the Advent of the Messiah, as will be explained in its proper place. We have now given a full refutation to mistaken assertions of our opponents, and having founded our arguments on prophecy, they can only be opposed by opponents of truth itself.

Chapter 22: Jesus, the suffering servant (Isaiah 52-53)

Isaiah 52:13, "Behold my servant shall prosper, he shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high." In this and the verses that follow until the end of chapter 53 the Christians assert, that the prophecy of Isaiah constitutes a prediction of Jesus, the Nazarene, concerning whom Isaiah has said, "He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high," because to him alone it is asserted these words can be attributed, "Surely he has borne our sicknesses and our pains. He was wounded by our transgressions and oppressed by our iniquities." For he is said to have, by his death, saved their souls from the power of Satan.

Refutation:—This assertion lacks truth, Scripture having declared, "Behold my servant shall prosper, he shall be exalted," etc.; how can these words be made to refer to Jesus, after they (the Christians) inconsiderately represent him to be God? If he were a Divine Being, how could the prophet call him a servant? The Christian disputant may say, that in a corporeal respect he was called servant, and in a spiritual respect he was entitled God." To this defense we object, by referring the reader to chapter 10, where we have given comprehensive proofs of the non-divinity of Christ, by showing that, by the authors of the Gospel, he was not considered to be a God, and much less so by himself. This matter shall again be noticed in the second part of this work; when we shall refute the several passages of importance relative to the subject in the gospel. We may be permitted to mention here that the prophetic word, "He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high," were not fulfilled in Jesus, he having been condemned to death in an inglorious manner, and thus the prophecy was not realized in him—"He shall see seed and live many days," for he had no offspring. His disciples cannot be

called his offspring, though the word בְּנֵי (sons) is applicable to them, and אֲבוֹתָם (fathers) to the teachers. The word זָרַע (seed) is used in the bible only for bodily heirs; nor do we find that Jesus reached an old age, for he was put to death when thirty-three years of age. We cannot apply the words, "he shall live long" (English version, "prolong his days") to a Divine Being, for the term of longevity is inappropriate to the Deity who is the Prime Cause of all existence, and whose self-existence is eternal; moreover, we wish to know to whom will the Christians attribute the promise, "Therefore will I apportion unto him spoil among the many, and with mighty man he shall share the spoil." Who are the many and mighty men with whom Jesus is to partake in the spoil? And to whom refer the words, "And he entreated for the transgressors?" Did Jesus, who, according to their futile notions, was styled a God, pray for transgressors? Many more such queries suggest themselves on this theme, but we will first examine the true import of the chapter. The words, "Behold my servant shall prosper," to the end of the 53rd chapter, concern the people of Israel, who are still bearing the yoke of this captivity, and are termed my servant in the singular number, which expression is used in many other places; for example, Isaiah 41:8-9, "And thou, O Israel, my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham, my friend." Again, "And I say unto thee, Thou art my servant." In chapter 44:21, Isaiah says, "And now hear, O Jacob my servant, and Israel whom I have chosen;" and further on, "Fear not, my servant Jacob;" and "Remember these things, O Jacob and Israel, for thou art my servant." "I have formed thee to be my servant." Ibid 45:4, "For the sake of Jacob my servant and Israel my chosen one." We find also in the Prophecies of Jeremiah (30:10), "Fear not, O my servant Jacob, saith the Lord, and be not dismayed, O Israel." The same is repeated, "Fear not, O Jacob my servant, saith the Lord." Similar expressions occur in the Psalms. Psalm 136:22, "An inheritance to Jacob his servant," etc. All these passages afford an evidence that the term servant in the singular is frequently addressed to the whole people of Israel. The same form of address in the singular is used in the delivery of the ten commandments, though directed to an assembly of six hundred thousand persons.

We may be asked, What connection with Israel has the following passage in Isaiah 53:4-5: "Surely he has borne our sickness, and carried our pains, and we considered him plagued, stricken by God, and afflicted. And he was wounded by our transgressions, and bruised by our iniquities. The chastisement for the sake of our weal came upon him, and by his wounds we were healed." It may be alleged, that it has never been known at any period that the people of Israel have borne the sicknesses, the pains, and the wounds due to the iniquity of other nations; and whatever afflictions and troubles Israel have endured, came upon them on account of their own sins, and not for those of other nation.

In our reply to this objection, we will show, first, that the prophets frequently designate humiliations and adversities by the name of sickness and wounds. Compare Isaiah 1:5-6, "The whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint, from the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it, but wounds and bruises and putrifying sores." And again in 30:26, "In the day that the Lord bindeth up the breach of his people, and healeth the sore of their wound." In like manner, Hosea 6:1, "He has torn and He will heal us. He hath smitten and He will bind up." Lamentations 2:13, "For thy breach is great like the sea, who can heal thee?" Jeremiah 10:19, "Woe is me for my hurt, my wound is grievous, and I said, This is my sickness, and I must bear it." Afterwards he explains the meaning of this fracture, this sore, and this sickness, by exclaiming (ibid verse 20), "My tabernacle is spoiled, and all my cords are broken; my children are gone forth from me, and they are not," etc. Ibid 30:12, "For thus saith the Lord, Thy fracture is mortifying, thy wound is exceedingly sore." Soon afterwards the consolation is given in the words in verse 17, "I shall bring relief unto thee and heal thee from thy wounds." The prophet then explains in what the healing and relief are to consist, viz. (verse 18), "Thus speaketh the Lord, I shall bring back the captivity of thy tents, O Jacob, and I shall have compassion on its inhabitants, and the city shall be built on its ruins, and the palace shall stand in its proper place. There shall again proceed forth from them thanksgiving and the voice of mirth, and I shall increase them, and they shall not be diminished," etc. In chapter 33:6 to 8, he says, "I bring up into it a remedy and healing, and I shall heal them." Therefore, he explains in what the remedy and healing will consist, in the words, "And I shall bring back the captivity of Judah and the captivity of Jerusalem, and I shall build them as formerly, and I shall cleanse them from all their iniquities which they have committed against me," etc.

From all these verses it appears, that Scripture designates the captivity as attended with calamities, and describes the troubles that took place during the exile under the names of bruises and wounds—but redemption, enlargement, and deliverance, Scripture depicts by the terms of curing and healing. Now, with the prophecy, "My servant shall be prosperous," we receive comfort, and strengthening of our hearts—although we are lowered deeply, and trodden down to the ground by reason of our captivity, hope is offered us for the future; and through the mercy of the Lord, we shall be raised, and exalted, and promoted to a high degree. When the days of restoration dawn upon us, the Gentile nations, together with their rulers, in witnessing the deliverance of Israel, and their elevation to a most exalted rank, will be greatly amazed—as they previously have been at our degradation during our captivity, when contumely and insult have been our lot from all nations of the earth—so they will express their wonder at our improved condition, and they will say, one to the other, "Now it is manifest to us, that we have all

strayed like a flock without a shepherd; each of us has turned his own way; our fathers inherited fallacy and vanity, in which there is no profit; no Divine law, nor any true faith, is belonging to any nation of the world except the people of Israel. The plagues and the torments which the Israelites have borne in captivity have not come upon them on account of their sins: we, ourselves, ought to have borne the trouble and the chastisements on account of the greatness of our iniquity. Surely, the sickness and the pain which ought to have come upon us, came upon them, to atone for our sins: while they were servants under our authority, while they have interceded for our welfare, and the success of our kingdoms—yet we considered it differently—namely, that on account of the greatness of their sin, for inflicting death on our Messiah, who is our God, these great calamities have befallen them." So far will go the words of the Gentiles.

Here we may mention, that the Gentiles are not responsible for their trespasses in the same manner as those to whom the will of God has been revealed. Only when their iniquity is outrageous, when their ill-treatment of righteous Israelites is aggravated, when the enormities inflicted on the Israelites equaled the chastisements imposed upon those who perished by the Deluge, or of those who shared the fate of Sodom and Gomorrah—it will be then the Lord will visit their iniquities, and bring total destruction upon them: though permitting the suffering and persecution of Israel, he will not allow actual extinction. This forbearance towards us is expressed in Jeremiah 30:11, "For I am with thee, saith the Lord, to save thee. For I shall make an end of all the Gentiles among whom I have scattered thee; but of thee I shall not make an end; I shall correct thee in measure, but I will not hold thee guiltless." Amos, likewise, notices in his book, chapter 3:2, "I have known you from all the families of the earth; on that account, I shall visit upon you all your sins:" and in the Proverbs 3:12 we find, "Him whom the Lord loveth, he chastiseth," etc., "and he shall cleave to the house of Jacob." The punishments of Israel are not only for their own good, but also for that of other nations. Hence, Isaiah prophesied concerning the restoration of Israel, chapter 14:1, "And strangers shall be joined with them." It is well known that Israel is the chosen nation concerning whom it is recorded in Exodus (chapter 19:5), "And ye shall be unto me a peculiar people from among all the nations; for mine is the earth." All this tends to prove, that the Almighty revealed His law to Israel for the purpose that they should learn to walk in the right way, and to perform righteous deeds. With this distinguished gift for themselves, He has coupled the noble mission that they should become useful to other nations; "For His mercy extends to all His creatures." With a view to Israel's instrumentality in His Divine government, we find (in Exodus 19:6), "And they shall be unto me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation." And to the same purport says Isaiah (chapter 61:6), "And ye shall be named the priests of the Lord; ye shall be called the servants of our God." "Ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory ye shall triumph." In numerous parts of the

Scripture, the people of Israel are called priests, it being the duty of that class to inculcate religious duties and precepts, and to "teach Jacob judgments, and Israel the Law." Thus, it is our vocation to instruct, in the law of the living God, the Gentiles, among whom we are dispersed; and as the Psalmist says, in Psalm 96:3, to "relate His glory among the Gentiles, His wonderful works among the nations."

All future felicity of the Gentiles will proceed from Israel, as has been assured to our patriarchs, (see Genesis 12:3), "And in thee all the nations of the earth shall be blessed;" and *ibid* 28:14, "And through thee and thy seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed." Here we have an additional testimony that the people of Israel are graciously distinguished, the Almighty having appointed them as His portion and inheritance, (see Psalm 135:4), "The Lord has chosen Jacob for Himself, and Israel as His distinct," (people), or in other words of Scripture, Deuteronomy 32:9, "For his people are the portion of the Lord, Jacob is the lot of his inheritance." The law has, therefore, been given to us, with the intention that we should teach to other nations the ways of the Lord. When the guide pursues the right road those who follow will safely reach the end of the journey, while the stragglers will undoubtedly lose their way altogether. Therefore must those who wish to arrive at their destination keep close to their leaders; and thus, at a future day, according to the prophecy of Zechariah 8:23, "Ten men from the Gentiles of various tongues shall take hold of the garment of the Jew, saying, We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." The felicity of Israel will be shared by those who associate with them in the same manner as Jethro (and his descendents who settled in Palestine) shared in the welfare of our people according to the promise of Moses, Numbers 10:32, "And it will come to pass, if thou wilt go with us, that all the good which the Lord will do unto us we will do unto thee." In Jeremiah 35:19, there is a further evidence that the promise given by Moses was fulfilled. The prophet says, "There shall never be wanting to Jonadab, the son of Rechab, a man to stand before me." Here the words, "to stand" mean to endure, to last, in conformity with the phrase used in Isaiah 66:22, "As the new Heavens and the new earth shall stand before me, saith the Lord, so shall stand your seed and your name."

Returning again to the examination of Isaiah 53, we have to notice, that, at the time of the restoration, the followers of the Jews will escape unhurt from all the troubles incident to wandering strangers. The Jews will resemble those warriors who, standing foremost, are exposed to the most imminent perils, and nevertheless, when the enemies shall be conquered, those who are in the rear shall equally share in the spoil, although not exposed to the same amount of danger. Hence Isaiah 53:5, says, metaphorically, "He is pierced for the sake of our transgressions, he is bruised for the sake of our iniquity, the chastisement for our good comes upon him, and through his sore we are

healed." The prophet, proceeding (ibid verse 12), in the same figure of speech, alludes to the spoil allotted to the front ranks of the divine army of the Israelites, and says, "Therefore will I give him his portion among the many, and with the mighty he shall divide spoil, because he has exposed himself to death, and has been counted among sinners, and has borne the iniquity of many, and interceded for transgressors."

From previous as well as subsequent verses, the reader is enabled to judge that the inspired writings treat solely on the calamities which Israel has to endure during the captivity, and that compensation will be granted to them from the time of their redemption from the captivity. See, for instance, Isaiah 52:1, "Awake, awake, put on thy strength, O Zion, put on the garments of thy glory, O Jerusalem, thou holy city, for there shall no more enter thee the uncircumcised and the unclean." Now this passage is succeeded by the words [Isaiah 52:12], "For not speedily shall ye go forth; ye shall not go in by flight, for the Lord is going before you, and the God of Israel is gathering you." Then follow these words [Isaiah 52:13], "Behold, my servant shall prosper." Chapter 54:1, commences, "Rejoice, thou barren woman who hast not borne;" and the verses which follow equally indicate Israel's final redemption. All these Divine promises are strictly connected with the gracious assurance laid down. Ibid 51:22, "Thus saith thy Sovereign, the Lord my God, who pleadeth the cause of His people; behold, I have taken out of thine hand the cup of trembling, even the dregs of the cup of my fury, thou shalt drink it no more." The same harmony is evident between the expression, "No uncircumcised and unclean shall enter there," and the oath contained in chapter 54:9, 10, "For this is as the waters of Noah unto me; for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth, so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee. For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed, but my kindness shall not depart from thee; neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord, that hath mercy on thee." Having now dwelt generally on the prophecy relative to the restoration of Israel, we shall examine, more closely, each particular expression.

Isaiah 52:13, "Behold my servant shall prosper, he shall be raised and exalted, and be very great."

The word *וַיִּשְׁפַּר* "he shall prosper," is found again in the 1st Samuel 18:14, "And David was prosperous in all his ways." "My servant shall prosper," relates to that period when Israel shall leave the countries of its captivity, and be elevated to the highest degree of happiness. "As many were astonished at thee, so was his appearance deteriorated more than that of any man, and his form more than that of the sons of men." The word astonished expresses the surprise which will be felt, and is used in the same sense in Ezekiel 28:19, "And all who knew thee among the nations were astonished at thee." The astonishment is to be felt by

those who are to consider "thy (Israel's) deep humiliation, and the duration of thy captivity; and they shall say one to the other, [Isaiah 52:14] 'Truly, his appearance is deteriorated more than any man, and his form more than that of the sons of men.'" And indeed it has become proverbial among the Gentiles, to exclaim, at the wretched appearance of their neighbor, "he looks as miserable as a Jew."

[Isaiah 52:15] "Thus, he shall startle many nations, the kings shall shut their mouths against him, for what has not been told them they have seen, and what they have not heard they have understood."

The prophet Isaiah means to say, that in the same manner as the Gentiles formerly were amazed at the depth of humiliation into which we had been thrown, they shall, at a future period, be astounded at the height of distinction at which we shall arrive; and they shall then say to each other, "who would have believed the report brought to us?" etc. The kings themselves shall remain dumb and speechless. The verb *וַיִּשְׁפַּר* they shall keep (their mouths) closed or shut, if similarly used in Job 5:16, *וַיִּשְׁפַּר פִּיָּהּ* "and wickedness closed its mouth." With the above prophecy of Isaiah agrees, also, the prophet Micah, chapter 7:10, "Gentiles shall see it, and be ashamed," in spite of all their strength; and they lay their hands on their mouths when perceiving that our distinctions shall surpass every description and prediction: (Isaiah 53:1) "Who would have believed the report we have heard; and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?" This shall be said by the Gentiles at the site of Israel's prosperity. "We (shall they exclaim), we have put no faith in the hearsay that reached us through the prophets, and now we perceive with our own eyes that more has been done than we had heard; for how could we conceive that the omnipotence of the Almighty would manifest itself especially on behalf of such an insignificant and disregarded people!"

"He grew up before him like a sucking babe, like a root on parched land, without form, without beauty that we might look at him, without comeliness that we might find pleasure in him."

The purport of this is, that the Gentiles shall declare the rise of Israel is just as preternatural as if a branch were to grow from parched ground. "While groaning under the yoke of his captivity, how could we suppose that he could endure the burdens imposed on him? When we consider their wasted body, and saw them groping their way like the blind, we did, indeed, not envy and covet their lot; but on the contrary, we vilified and spurned them. Isaiah 53:3, "He was despised and the least of men; a man of pains, and acquainted with disease, and as one from whom man hideth his countenance, he was despised, and we esteemed him not." This means, How should we (Gentiles) have envied his (the Jew's) lot who was the most despised and

abject of the children of men; who was accustomed to load himself with all the troubles and torments of his exile, which may be compared to pains and diseases. On account of his extraordinary inferiority and degradation we despised him, hiding our faces from him, being unwilling to notice him. Isaiah 53:4, "However, he hath borne our diseases, and carried our pains, and we esteemed him smitten of God and afflicted."

This means—The Gentiles after having perceived, by ocular evidence, that he (the Jew) has the truth on his side, they shall say: "We have all wandered like sheep, the miseries and persecutions of the captivity have not befallen him on account of his own iniquity, but ought to have come upon us on account of our iniquity; and while we believe that he underwent trials and chastisements in retribution for his rebellion to God, he (the Jew) suffered in consequence of the transgressions of the Gentiles. [Isaiah 53:5] "And he was tormented on account of our transgressions; he was bruised on account of our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and by his bruises, we were healed." The word לָגַח (afflicted) is related to יָלַח (pain as women in labor).

The phrase "the chastisement of our peace was upon him," indicates that this life presents a world of change and vicissitude, no enjoyment is complete and perfect; there is no state of peace without struggle; there is no quietude without an intermixture of strife and contention, and there is no gladness and enjoyment without sorrow and contrition. All pleasures and delights are intermingled with evils. Hence we (Gentiles) see clearly that "the chastisement of our peace has come upon him;" that is to say, we (Gentiles) have acquired a state of peace, but the struggles by which it was obtained fell to his (the Jew's) lot. Thus he (the Jew) received wounds and bruises, as results of his captivity, while we derived from his vicissitudes healing and restoration, viz., prosperity and dominion. The word נִרְפָּא (healed) is used in an analogous sense, in Exodus 15:26, "For I the Lord am He who healeth thee," which sentence accords with the preceding words, "All the diseases which I put upon the Egyptians, I shall not put upon thee."

The word תְּבוֹרַתוֹ means "by his bruises." The omission of the Dagesh, in the second radical letter, has led some to interpret it "in his society." Those expositors compare the word with that occurring in Hosea 4:17, viz., תְּבוֹרַת יִשְׂרָאֵל "Ephraim is associated with Idols," etc. In that case, it would seem that we (Gentiles) praying to God in society, or in conjunction with them (the Jews), the Almighty listened to our entreaties and sent us relief from our afflictions. Isaiah 53:6, "We all strayed like sheep, each of us turned to his own way; and the Lord visited on him the iniquity of us all."

This means—The Gentiles will make confession of their guilt, by acknowledging that the Lord is truly and entirely

with Israel, and that they (the Gentiles) strayed like a shepherdless flock, every man following his own way, and each people worshipping his peculiar god: "but now," will they say, "now we know that our idols are not gods."

In corroboration of this we find, in Jeremiah 16:19, 20, "To thee nations will come from the corners of the earth, and they will say, Surely our fathers inherited falsehood, vanity in which there is no profit." Moreover we read there, shall a man make gods unto himself, and they are not gods? (thus the Gentiles will continue their self accusations) "We have deserved a most rigorous punishment, but the Lord visited and cast our punishment upon Israel. He has hitherto labored for our sake and borne our yoke and our tribulations, henceforward we will freely and cheerfully labor for him, and subject ourselves to him."

Therefore Isaiah says, 61:5, "And strangers shall stand forth and feed your flocks," etc. With the same view that prophet says (chapter 49:23), "And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, their queens thy nursing mothers; they shall bow down their faces to the ground before thee, and they shall lick the dust off thy feet, and thou shalt know that I am the Lord, and that those who hope in me shall not be put to shame."

Isaiah 53:7, "He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth; he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before its shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth." For (will the Gentiles say concerning the Israelites) while that people was held captive under our power we extorted from them contributions under various pretexts, and by means of false accusations. We inflicted on them bodily torments, yet they showed patient endurance under them, and remained silent and calm like the lamb when led to the slaughter, and like the weak defenseless sheep submitting to the shearers.

This condition of Israel is prefigured in the complaint in Psalm 44:12 [44:11], "Thou givest us away like the sheep that is to be consumed." A similar comparison is made by Jeremiah (chapter 50:17), "Israel is like a scattered flock, the lions have chased them away: first, the king of Assyria has devoured them; and lastly, Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, has crushed them. Isaiah 53:8, "He was taken away from prison and severe judgment, and who shall speak of his generation? For he was cut off from the land of the living, and through the transgression of my people he was stricken."

This means—That by this time the Israelites will have escaped the direful oppressions to which they had been subjected during their exile; and it will then be manifest that no human language can supply an adequate description of the incessant afflictions endured by the Jews, and of their unswerving belief in the only One God. Then will the Gentiles acknowledge that the visitation which

befell the Jews tended less to illustrate the sinfulness of the victims, than the depravity of the persecutors. The word "transgression" is followed by the expression, "my people," for each nation will attribute to itself the consequences of the malignity to which Israel had been exposed.

Isaiah 53:9, "And he made his grave with the wicked and with the rich his tomb, although he had done no wrong, and no guile had been in his mouth."

This means—That, in honor of his religion, the Israelite use to expose himself freely to martyrdom, as is confirmed by the above-cited allusion to it in Psalm 44:23 [44:22], "For on account of thee, we are slain all the day, for we are considered like sheep for slaughter, for we have constantly been attacked by false accusation, through which they sought to inflict on us the retributions due to the guilty."

In all such cases the persecuted parties were not offenders, and we Gentiles felt incensed because the Israelites would not conform to our ill-founded dogmas, and "would not hold deceit in their mouths." For even to escape death the Israelites would not make a confession with their lips to which their hearts must give an utter denial. Isaiah 53:10, "And it pleased the Lord to humble him. He afflicted him with ailment. Since his soul has offered itself as a sacrifice, he shall see seed and live long, and the delight of the Lord shall prosper in his hand."

This means—Since Israel has so firmly adhered to the divine law, and has subjected himself to death under religious persecution, we [Gentiles] see no other object for the infliction and chastisements, except that the Almighty visits him with punishments in order to humble and to try him with a view to compensate him for his submission: therefore, in sharing his grave with the Israelite he shall see seed, that is to say, become exceedingly numerous. This elliptical mode of omitting the word expressive of excess and largeness occurs also in Numbers 13:32, where we find *אֲנָשֵׁי גִבּוֹרִים* "Men of size," that is, men of large or gigantic size. Other prophets also contribute their testimony to the future increase of Israel. See, for instance, Zechariah 10:8, "I will hiss for them and gather them, for I have redeemed them, and they shall increase as they have increased."

In the same chapter the prophet foretells: [Zechariah 10:10] "I will bring them into the land of Gilead and Lebanon, and it shall not be large enough for them" (English Version, "no place found for them"). Ezekiel 36:37, has on the same subject the following prophecy: "I will increase them with men as a flock." The words "he shall live long" have a parallel in Isaiah 65:22, "For as the days of the tree shall be the days of my people." Zechariah says, in chapter 8:4, "And every man (shall sit) with his staff in his hand for very age."

The Almighty in afflicting and humbling us during our captivity purposes, therefore, to bring to pass our ultimate benefit, and to strengthen our number in the time of our restoration. This is confirmed in Deuteronomy 30:5, "And He will make thee better and more numerous than thy fathers were." So far go the words which convey the restoration of Israel. The last two verses of the chapter contain the promise added by the Almighty (Isaiah 53:11), "He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied. By his knowledge shall my righteous servant make many righteous, for he shall bear their iniquities." The words, "by his knowledge," are thus illustrated in Jeremiah 31:34, "For they all shall know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them." "He shall make many people righteous," means that Israel shall impart its knowledge of righteousness to the Gentiles. See on this point Micah 4:2, "And many nations shall come and say, Come and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob, that He may teach us His ways, and we will walk in His paths; for the law shall go forth from Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem." Hence, Israel, the servant of the Lord, shall, by his righteousness, remove the wickedness of the Gentiles, and through his righteousness peace and happiness shall reign among mankind at large, Isaiah 53:12, "Therefore will I divide him a portion among the great, and with the mighty he shall divide the spoil; because he poured out his soul unto death, and he was numbered with the transgressors, and he bare the sin of many, and prayed for the transgressor."

This means—I shall allot him a portion and a reward among the greatest and worthiest men that lived on earth, viz., among the patriarchs and holy prophets. The allotment will consist in spiritual beatitude which far surpasses all corporeal well-being. The translation of *גִּבּוֹרִים* (great) is justified by the occurrence of *גִּבּוֹרִים* in Genesis 25:23, "And the greater [in the English Version, the elder] shall serve the younger." But worldly prosperity is likewise promised in Isaiah's prophecy, as he says, "And with the mighty he shall divide the spoil." "The mighty" are the hosts of Gog and Magog, and the nations who will come to carry on war with Jerusalem, and who will be removed by sudden death. See Ezekiel 38:22, "I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood, and I will pour down floods of rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him," etc. Israel shall then partake of the spoil and property in retribution of the extortion and depredation formerly practiced towards Israel. See Zechariah 14:14, "And the wealth of all heathen shall be gathered together, gold, and silver, and raiment in great abundance."

Thus Israel shall be compensated for the bodily and mental suffering heaped upon them during their exile.

In that epoch, life shall be ransomed by life and property by property. This is intended by the words, "Because he poured forth his soul unto death." The verb *הִפָּקֵד* "he poured forth" (from the root *הִפָּקֵד*) is synonymous with the expression in Genesis 24:20, "And she poured forth her pitcher," etc.

"And he was numbered with the transgressors" is analogous to the sentence, "And he made his grave with the wicked." That is to say, the gentiles treated Israel as a wicked, ungodly race, and, therefore, these exuberant blessing shall now be bestowed unto Israel which are reserved for the upright and God-fearing men, and those who revere His name like the holy patriarchs and the prophets of our people. "He bore the sin of many" means, he was not only free from the wickedness imputed to him by the gentiles, but through his piety he bore their sins and suffered for their iniquity. At the same time he prayed for those nations who had inflicted on him heavy sufferings, and besought the Almighty to grant prosperity and abundance to the kingdoms of the gentiles. See Jeremiah 29:7, "And seek the peace of the city whither I have caused you to be carried captive, and pray unto the Lord for it," etc. With the same tolerant spirit our Rabbis admonish us thus: "Pray for the prosperity of thy native country." The prayers we offer up to the Almighty are an evidence of our submission to this precept. We pray for the long life and happiness of our gentile rulers, and we address other prayers all tending to prove the interest we take in the welfare of other nations; we pray for the fertility of their land and for the plentiful supply of food required for the nourishment of all.

Chapter 23: Man, unable to keep all the laws of Moses, cannot earn salvation (Isaiah 64:5)

Isaiah 64:5 (in the English Version, verse 6), "And we are all as an unclean man, and all our righteousnesses are as a rotten garment and as a leaf, and our iniquities take us away like a wind." A Christian once addressed me in the following terms:—"That there is not one man on the earth who does good and sinneth not. Yea, ye must know well that there is not one man capable of observing all the commandments prescribed in the laws of Moses; and that your righteous acts have not enabled you to attain the end you seek. How inefficient, then, must the prayers and the actions of the wicked prove?"

Reply—We must certainly admit that no man can obtain salvation through his own acts alone; but man must combine with his piety a total submission to the mercy and loving-kindness of the Lord. Jeremiah announces it clearly (chapter 30:21), "And I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach unto me, for who is he whose heart is emboldened to approach unto me?"

The Psalmist says, in the same manner (Psalm 65:5), "Blessed is the man whom thou choosest and causest to be near unto thee, that he may dwell in thy courts." Therefore, he prays (in Psalm 79:9), "Help us, O God of our salvation, for the sake of the glory of Thy name, and deliver us and forgive us our sins, for the sake of Thy name." In Psalm 25:11, the sacred poet says, "For the sake of Thy name forgive us our iniquity, for it is great." Again in Psalm 115:1, "Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto Thy name give glory, for the sake of Thy mercy, and for the sake of Thy faithfulness." Again in Psalm 143:11, "For the sake of Thy name thou shalt quicken me; for the sake of Thy righteousness thou shalt bring my soul out of trouble." In Psalm 44:27, he exclaims, "Arise and deliver us for the sake of Thy loving-kindness, in the greatness of Thy mercy blot out my transgression." And in Psalm 80:4, he implores the Almighty, "Return unto us, O God, and cause Thy countenance to shine (upon us) and we shall be saved." Thus says, also, the prophet Jeremiah 14:7, "If our iniquities testify against us, then grant, O God, for the sake of Thy name;" and further [Jeremiah 14:21], "For the sake of Thy name do not rebuke us." In the Lamentations 5:21, he says "Cause us, O Lord, to return unto Thee and we shall be turned." Daniel, in his prayer, 9:18-19, uses similar language, "For not on account of our righteousness we pour out our supplications before Thee; but on account of Thine abundant mercies, O Lord, hear them; O Lord, forgive us; O Lord, hearken and grant them; delay not, O God, for Thine own sake, for Thy name is called upon Thy city and Thy people." Numerous other passages might be quoted all conveying the same idea.

Hence the Almighty has given us the assurance, through His prophets, to deliver us from our captivity, and to blot out our sins and iniquities, not for our sake but for His own sake. Thus Isaiah says, (48:11), "For my sake, for my own sake will I do it." In chapter 43:25, the same prophet says, "I, even I, am he who blotteth out thy transgressions for my own sake, and thy sins I will not remember." This is expressed, also, by Ezekiel, 36:22, "Not for your sake, O House of Israel, am I dealing thus, but for my holy name." We find in the same book, chapter 20:44, "And ye shall know, that I am the Lord, by my dealing for the sake of my name, and not according to your evil ways and your corrupt actions, O House of Israel, saith the Lord God." We may cite here, also, the words of Jeremiah 31:37, "Thus saith the Lord, If the heavens above shall be measured, or the foundations of the earth be searched, I will also rebuke the seed of Israel for all they have done." This divine declaration clearly confirms our opinion that our salvation does not solely depend on our imperfect individual merit and righteousness, but on the mercy of the faithful God, who will never change although we may be found undeserving before him.

The expression of the prophet, "We are all unclean, and all our virtues are like a rotten garment," has reference to such religious works as are performed through vain-glory and selfish motives, in order to create envy among our

neighbors, it is evident enough that the best actions must displease the Almighty when they originate from base motives; "For the Searcher of hearts," say our sages, "regards the intentions only." Hence the admonition in Deuteronomy 15:10, "Thou shalt supply him liberally, nor shall thy heart be vexed while thou givest." And in chapter 28:47, we read, "Because thou didst not serve the Lord thy God in joy, and with a cheerful heart." The above passage, "We are all unclean, and all our righteousness is like a rotten garment," relates, therefore, to the objectionable conduct and impure intentions of those who selfishly labor in the cause of the Almighty, and, as the leaves dropping from the tree are carried away by the wind, so we, in consequence of our sins, are dispersed throughout all the quarters of the globe.

Chapter 24: Annulment of the laws of Moses prophesied (Jeremiah 3:16)

Jeremiah 3:16, "And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, saith the Lord, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the Lord, neither shall it come to mind, neither shall they remember it, neither shall they visit it, neither shall that be done any more." From this the Christians argue that the law of Moses, which was deposited by the side of the ark, would at a future period be annulled.

Refutation:—In chapter 19 we have already proved by unmistakable evidence, and especially by their own Gospels, and even by allusions to their theological writers, that the law of Moses is eternal, and that no new revelation will ever supplant our old law. Having then sufficiently proved the feebleness of the opinions adverse to this view, we confine ourselves here to the above quoted explanations: every reader of the Scriptures knows the passage in 1 Kings 8:9, "There was nothing in the ark but the two tables of stone." These tables having been called the tables of the covenant, the ark, as the receptacle of those tables, was named "the ark of the covenant." The Christians themselves admit that the contents of the tables of the Decalogue are immutable, and that no man can hope for the salvation of his soul who repudiates the Ten Commandments. We shall have to return to this subject on reviewing some passages in Matthew 19. So much is certain, that the Christians are enjoined to follow the Ten Commandments, although they have arbitrarily altered the day appointed for the celebration of the Sabbath, and, although no sanction for so doing was given either by Jesus or his disciples; consequently, the Christians have no right to plead that the ark of the covenant of the Lord, and the two tables with their contents, will ever be forgotten; nor are they justified in the assertion, that the law of Moses will be abrogated: and not be remembered any longer by Israel, since the scriptural passages cited by them do not afford any evidence in support of their argument, particularly as Malachi, the last of the prophets (chapter

3:22 [4:4]), gives the divine admonition, "Remember the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded him on Horeb, enjoining it on all Israel with the statutes and judgments." This prophet clearly demonstrates that the divine law will certainly not be abolished at any future time; on the contrary, that the dignity of Israel and the dignity of Jerusalem will be augmented at a future day. Hence he alludes to those days when Israel shall have increased and multiplied in the Holy Land, and when the Gentile nations shall come to seek the Word of the Lord at Jerusalem. To this effect says Isaiah (chapter 2:2), "And all nations shall flow unto Him." Those nations shall not profanely ask after the divine covenant, and intrude into the resting-place of the Holy Ark, for they shall be too fully impressed with the sanctity of the house of God, where the throne of judgment will be re-established. The temple will then not be the exclusive locality to which the Gentiles shall flock, but all Jerusalem will be a residence of divine knowledge, whither the Gentiles shall resort in order to call upon the name of the Lord, and to serve Him with one accord; and the sacred and godly duties of man will not be limited only to the precincts of the temple. See Joel 4:17 (3:17 in the English version), "And Jerusalem shall be holy, and strangers shall not pass through it." Here we learn that the holiness of Jerusalem will prevent aliens from entering it for the purpose of desecrating it. The unworthy among the Gentiles, and the unclean among Israel, will in like manner be kept away through awe of the Holy City; but the city of the Lord shall spread its conversion and enlightening influence to the remotest distance. The Gentiles, following the wholesome ministration of the chosen race, will be deemed servants of the Lord like the children of Israel. The prophet, therefore, says, "And many nations will join the Lord and shall be my people." In chapter 56:6-7 Isaiah predicts, "Also the sons of the strangers that join themselves to the Lord to serve Him, and to love the name of the Lord, to be His servants: every one that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of my covenant, even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer; their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar; for mine house shall be called a house of prayer for all people."

This shows that, at the time of the Advent of the Messiah, all nations will pay homage to the holiness of the land of Israel, and the entire land of Palestine will assume the sacredness of the city of Jerusalem; and the city of Jerusalem will again partake of the sanctity of the Divine Temple.

Chapter 25: Jesus, the Divine Savior, living among men prophesied (Jeremiah 14:8)

Jeremiah 14:8, "Hope of Israel, the Saviour in the time of trouble, why shouldest thou be as a stranger in the land, and as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarry for the

night?" I was once asked by a Christian the meaning of the expression, "Hope of Israel, the Saviour in the time of trouble." I replied, the prophet here addressed the Almighty, as in chapter 17:13, "O Lord, the Hope of Israel, all who forsake thee shall be ashamed." The same Deity is the Savior of Israel in the time of trouble, and there is no other Savior besides Him. See also Hosea chapter 13:4, "And there is no Saviour besides me." My interrogator said thereupon, You ought to bear in mind that the prophet, speaking about this Savior, says, "Why shouldst thou be as a stranger and as a wayfaring man, that turneth aside to tarry for the night? Does not this prove to you, by means of those prophetic words, that the saving Divine Being would dwell like a stranger on earth, as our Savior Jesus actually did? Why then do you withhold from him your belief after the prophet gives his testimony about him?" I replied to this, "You Christians are accustomed to establish your objections to our faith, and the evidences of your faith, on detached biblical passages, without regard to the leading idea, and with the preceding and subsequent words of the text, nor do you make unbiased comparisons with the parallel sayings of other prophets; for your object is not to expose absolute truth, but to confirm, by means of subtleties and specious reasonings, your preconceived notions."

The true object of Jeremiah will be found on the perusal of the adjoining passages. Jeremiah having a prescience of the famine which was about to take place in the Holy Land (see the commencement of chapter 14), when he saw that the severity of the dearth would exceed all bounds, and the consternation of Jerusalem would put up a cry to heaven; when he noticed that the calamity would be so universal that the very brutes of the field would suffer under its scourge, he made the confession recorded in the words [Jeremiah 14:7], "If our iniquities bear witness against us, O Lord, then deal with us according to Thy name." By this he declared, that the trouble had not come upon our people by way of chance, but as a consequence of our misdeeds; for the famine did not prevail anywhere else except in the Land of Israel; therefore, he implored of the Almighty to grant relief for the sake of His Holy Name: that is to say, God, as proclaimed in His supreme unity by our nation, is on that account called "the God of Israel," whilst we are denominated "His people and the flock of His pasture." When He chastises us, He acts in accordance with justice, since our derelictions are numerous, and since we so frequently strayed in the pursuit of idolatry, the perpetration of violence, and in listening to false prophets. Jeremiah having thus made confession of our sins, exclaims, by way of entreaty, "Thou Hope of Israel, and its Saviour in the time of trouble!" The prophet hereby implies, that, although they have departed from Thy paths, they (the Israelites) still hope that Thou wilt save them from the present distress, and as Thou hast delivered them in every generation, so wilt Thou also now have mercy on them, and not suffer them to be consumed by famine. Then the prophet continues, "Why wilt Thou be like a stranger and like a traveler who has turned aside to pass the night."

By this we have to understand, "That Thou, O Lord, wilt hide Thy face from us and have no compassion on us, it will appear as if Thou wert not the Lord of the Earth, but as if thou wert a stranger in a foreign country, without power therein to afford relief from trouble." In a similar manner said Moses (Numbers 14:15-16), "And if Thou wilt kill all the people like one man, then the nations who have heard Thy fame will say, Because the Lord had not the power to bring this people," etc. So prays also the Psalmist, "Arise, why wilt Thou sleep; O Lord, awake, why wilt Thou abandon us for ever;" or, in other words, Permit it not to appear as if Thou were unmindful of our misery and of our affliction. In fact, all the prophets address the Almighty in an anthropomorphical manner, in order to convey their ideas more intelligibly to their audience.

The reason that Jeremiah compares the Almighty with a stranger is threefold. 1st. A sojourner in a foreign land, one passing merely through a foreign city, is unable to rescue the oppressed from the hand of the oppressor, or the poor and the needy from the hand of the depredator. For though such strangers or travelers be of high rank, their authority is too inconsiderable, when in a foreign land, to afford any assistance to those around them. Thus the Sodomites said about Lot: "This one man came to live here as a stranger, and now he will be even a judge." 2ndly. Though a man be a native or an established settler, he may be unable to give assistance in times of trouble, being deprived of the requisite influence and presence of mind. Bewildered about his own safety, he is utterly incapacitated to extricate others from their unfortunate state. 3rdly. Even he can only grapple with those who are inferior in valor and strength, but when met with a superior force he must either desist or submit. Hence the prophet says, "Why wilt thou be like a mighty man who is unable to save."

In order, however, at the same time, to teach that such a condition is totally incompatible with the divine nature of the Almighty, and to show that the Almighty is really the God of the heavens and of the earth, and at the same time dwells among us, the prophet, by the addition, "But Thou art among us," refutes the imputation that the God of Israel is a stranger, and rather proves that He is established where we sojourn, and that we are the strangers and not He; that we have, therefore, the best founded expectation that He will save us. The same declaration, "Thou art in the midst of us," stands in just opposition to the question, "Why wilt thou be like a bewildered man?" The prophet suggests that the Almighty, far from being perplexed by the suddenness of terrific occurrences, rather manifests himself as an incomparable and omnipotent deliverer. In like manner we see in the words, "And Thou art among us," a repudiation of the idea that "Thou art like a strong man who cannot deliver," when resisted by a superior force; for the prophet now acknowledges, "And Thy name is called upon us, for Thou hast long been adored by us as the God of Israel. Thou hast brought us out from the land of Egypt with a strong hand, and an outstretched arm."

The very words of the Decalogue connect the divine unity with the deliverance from Egypt, since it is said, "I am the Lord thy God who hath brought thee out of the land of Egypt." It is a notorious fact, that Scripture in various places points out the condescension of God, who allied His name with Israel, by saving them from various troubles. See, for instance, Leviticus 22:33, "Who hath brought you out of Egypt, in order to be unto you a God." When the subjects of King Hezekiah were rescued from the hand of Sennacherib, King of Assyria, the Almighty was also acknowledged as God of Israel. See 2 Kings 19:20, "Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Since thou hast prayed unto me concerning Sennacherib, the King of Assyria, I have heard thee." The prayer here alluded to was received favorably, because it expressed unconditional submission to the all-powerful Being who alone rules the destinies of His creatures. Further views of the faith of Israel in the salvation by the Lord, may be obtained from Deuteronomy 3:24, where we read, "For who is a God in heaven or in the earth, who could perform anything like unto Thy deeds and Thy mighty works?" Isaiah says, (chapter 45:15) "Truly Thou art an invisible God, the God of Israel and its Savior." Jeremiah 3:23 says "Verily in the Lord our God is the salvation of Israel; our trust, our reliance is therefore in Thee, and Thou wilt neither abandon nor forsake us." Thus we understand the quotation from Jeremiah, which is placed at the heading of this chapter, and which is totally misapplied when referred to on account of his having been a stranger on earth.

Chapter 26: An everlasting captivity for the Jews without redemption prophesied (Jer 17:4)

Jeremiah 17:4, "And I will cause thee to serve thine enemies in the land which thou knowest not; for ye have kindled a fire in mine anger, which shall burn for ever."

Christian expositors have explained this verse by the assertion that Jeremiah here predicted an everlasting captivity, from which no redemption is to be hoped.

Refutation:—The Hebrew words עַד עוֹלָם occur in Scripture in three significations. First, in application to an existence unlimited by time. Thus, we have in 2 Samuel 7:26, "That Thy name may be magnified for ever, by saying The Lord of Hosts is the God of Israel." In 1 Chronicles 17:24, we also find, "In order that thy name may be magnified for ever, by saying, The Lord of Hosts is the God of Israel." The second meaning of עַד עוֹלָם for ever, relates to man's limited existence on earth, (see 1 Samuel 1:22), "That he may sit here for ever." And 2 Samuel 12:10, David is thus forewarned, "The sword shall never (לֹא אֶתְּסוּר עַד עוֹלָם) depart from thy house." The word never merely relates to David's lifetime. In the third

place, the Hebrew expression עַד עוֹלָם stands distinct from the forenamed two meanings, and relates to a period finite in the prescience of the Almighty, but unlimited according to the knowledge of men. See Isaiah 32:14, "Because the palaces shall be forsaken, the multitude of the city shall be left; the forts and towers shall be dens for ever, a joy of wild asses, a pasture of flocks." The limitation of the words for ever is shown in the verse immediately following, "Until the spirit be poured down upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field," etc. The destruction decreed to last for ever will, nevertheless, give way to restoration as soon as the spirit, that is to say the favor of the Lord, shall descend on us. The term it shall burn for ever, refers to the third signification; but it cannot mean the infinitude of eternity as some Christians would have us believe, because all the prophets have predicted a complete restoration to the whole House of Israel. What can be more explicit than the following passages:—Isaiah, in chapter 66:20, says, "And they (the Gentiles) shall bring all your brethren a gift from all nations as a gift unto the Lord, on horses and in chariots," etc. Jeremiah 30:8, says, "Strangers shall no more enslave them (the Israelites)." Ezekiel 39:28-29 says, "And they shall know that I am the Lord their God, since I have caused them to be exiled among the Gentiles; and I will gather them into their land, and I will not suffer any of them to remain behind, and I will no more hide my countenance from them, as I have poured out my spirit over all the House of Israel, saith the Lord God." Such well defined promises admit of no contradiction, or they have all proceeded from the same divine source.

Chapter 27: God's promises to the Jews were conditional (Jeremiah 18:7)

Jeremiah 18:7, "In an instant I shall speak concerning a nation and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up and to pull down and to destroy it."

From this and the ensuing verses, Christians have concluded that the Jews vainly expect the fulfillment of those promises which refer to a prosperous futurity. They tell us (Jews), your hopes must be disappointed. Sinfully you have acted, yea sinfully in the sight of the Lord, for all the promises of the prophet, whether for good or for evil, are given conditionally. The Almighty ordains a propitious future for a people or for an individual; and if the people or the individual, by evil acts, become unworthy of such a benefit, it is withheld, and the Almighty substitutes evil for the intended good; and when the people or the individual again repent and improve, the imminent punishment is withdrawn, a favor is bestowed instead, as has been exemplified by the history of Jonah in Nineveh. The Christians interpret, therefore, the above passage from Jeremiah thus—"At one instant I decree the destruction of a people or of a kingdom, etc. When, however, the people

or the kingdom amend their conduct, I withhold the threatened calamity. At another instant I resolve to deal out benefits. When, however, the people offend me, and act disobediently, I recall my decrees of grace." To this the Christians add the following imputation:—The Almighty has, time after time, released Israel from the tyranny of their enemies. Admonition after admonition He sent to them through His prophets to induce them not to follow the instigations of a corrupt heart, and He imposed on them the duty of obeying His commandments and statutes. The Israelites, however, whenever they felt the soothing help of the Lord, hardened their hearts again, and neglected the biddings of the Almighty. This has induced Him to abhor them and to reject them altogether. And He will never again favor them. See 2 Kings 17:20, "And the Lord rejected all the seed of Israel and afflicted them, and delivered them into the hand of spoilers until He had cast them out of His sight."

Thus says also Jeremiah 15:1, "And the Lord said unto me, If even Moses and Samuel were to stand before me, my mind would not be towards this people; cast them out of my sight and let them go forth."

Refutation:—It is a false accusation to allege, that we Jews expect the fulfillment of the divine promises so long as we persevere in evil doings, and commit sins like depraved men, and still expect a reward as if we were true and zealous servants of God. Far be from us any such presumption. But we do profess with an unshaken confidence that we shall one day cling to the Lord with an undivided heart, and that the Almighty will receive us in mercy, subdue our misdeeds, and then bring to pass all the glorious predictions given by the prophets. We rely on the words pronounced in Deuteronomy 4:30, "When thou shalt be in trouble, and when all these things shall have befallen thee, in the latter days thou shalt return to the Lord thy God and hearken to His voice; for the Lord thy God is a merciful God, He will not suffer thee to be weakened, nor will He destroy thee, nor will He forget the covenant with thy fathers which He swore unto them." We may also advert to chapter 30:1-8, of the same book, "And it shall come to pass, when all these things shall have come upon thee, the blessing and the curse which I have set before thee, and when thou shalt have taken it to heart among all the nations among which the Lord thy God shall have banished thee, that thou shalt return with all thine heart and with all thy soul to the Lord thy God, and obey His voice according to all that I command unto thee this day, thou and thy sons. And the Lord thy God shall bring back thy captivity, and gather thee from among all the people whither the Lord thy God shall have scattered thee. Even if thine outcasts be at the end of the heavens; even from thence shall the Lord thy God gather thee, and even from thence shall He take thee, and the Lord thy God shall bring thee into the land which thy fathers inherited; and thou shalt inherit it, and He shall do good unto thee, and He shall make thee more numerous than thy ancestors. And the Lord thy God shall circumcise thy heart, and the heart of

thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, for the sake of thy life. And the Lord thy God shall bring all these imprecations upon thine enemies, etc., when thou shalt return to the Lord thy God." The prophets have also announced the constancy of our future adherence to the Lord, and have made the fulfillment of the good promised dependent on our full repentance. See Isaiah 44:22, "I have blotted out thine iniquities like a thick cloud, and thy sins like a cloud; return unto me, for I have redeemed thee." Also Jeremiah 3:14 says, "Return unto me, ye backsliding children, saith the Lord, for I am married unto you, and I will take you one from a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you into Zion." See also Ezekiel 33:11, "Say unto them, As I live, saith the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways, for why will ye die, O House of Israel?" In like manner, says Hosea 14:2-3, "Turn, O Israel, unto the Lord thy God, for thou hast stumbled through thine iniquity. Take with yourselves words, and turn unto the Lord, and say unto Him: Thou who forgivest every iniquity, receive us graciously, and we will render the calves of our lips (i.e. Thanksgivings)." Zechariah, in chapter 1:3, says, "And thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the Lord of Hosts: Return ye unto me, saith the Lord of Hosts, and I will return unto you, saith the Lord of Hosts."

To the same effect, says Malachi 3:7, "Since the days of your fathers ye have departed from my statutes, and ye have not observed them: return unto me, and I will return unto you, saith the Lord of Hosts." Similar passages abound among the prophets, which tend to prove that repentance is the fundamental condition on which all our hopes hinge, for no human being escapes the commission of sin. See Ecclesiastes 7:20, "For there is no righteous man in the earth who doeth good and sinneth not." Therefore our All-gracious Ruler has taught us the means of repentance, and the ways to avoid the snares of depravity. David had committed many transgressions, and subjected himself with sincere submission to the divine chastisements: his sins were, therefore, forgiven him, and his good works were accepted in favor of him and his posterity. See Isaiah 37:35, "And I shall protect this city to save it for my sake, and for the sake of my servant David." King Manasseh affords another instance of pardon having been obtained through sincere repentance, although he had exceeded his predecessors in the indulgence of an iniquitous conduct; yet the Lord was pleased with his contrition, and reinstated him on his throne. Consequently we thus interpret the passage, "At an instant I shall speak," etc. The reparation of Israel's conduct is the only condition of their escape from the infliction of condign punishments; therefore the prophet continues the divine message in the following manner: "Now go to speak to the men of Judah and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, Thus saith the Lord, behold I frame evil against you, and devise a device against you; return ye now every one from his evil way, and correct your ways and your doings." Nor are we

disposed to imagine that we should suffer less for our sins than our forefathers did for theirs. On the contrary, we are admonished to be equally vigilant as our ancestors in the avoidance of sin; and when our frail human nature betrays us into sinful acts, it becomes our imperative duty to resort to sincere repentance, for only then the Lord receives us and casts our sins into the abyss of oblivion. See Ezekiel 18:21, "But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. All his transgressions that he has committed, that shall not be mentioned unto him; in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live."

We may mention here, also, that the many divine predictions and promises which are of a cheering character have been given in the unconditional and irrevocable form of an oath; for instance *Ibid.* 36:7-12, "Thus saith the Lord God, I have lifted up mine hand, (which is the symbol of an oath) that the Heathens that are around you shall surely bear their shame. But ye, O, mountains of Israel, ye shall shoot forth your branches and yield your fruit to my people of Israel, for they are at hand to come. For behold I am for you, and I will turn unto you, and you shall be tilled and sown. And I will multiply men among you, O, all ye house of Israel, even all of it; and the cities shall be inhabited, and the wastes shall be built, and I will multiply among you men and cattle, and they shall increase and bring fruit, and I will settle you after your old estates, and will do better unto you than at your beginnings, and ye shall know that I am the Lord; yea, I will cause men to walk among you, even my people Israel; and they shall possess thee, and thou shalt be their inheritance, and thou shalt no more bereave them of men."

Thus the Almighty communicates to us in Ezekiel's prophecy, that he will prosperously re-establish the Holy Land in its primitive condition, and even enlarge His bounty upon it, so that it shall no longer consume Israel, its inhabitants.

The disputant cannot raise an objection and maintain that the prophecy of restoration is merely given conditionally, for there an oath is expressed, lifting of the hand, which does not admit of any condition whatever. See Deuteronomy 32:40, where we read, "For I lift up my hand unto the heavens, and I say, as true as I live for ever." Nor can it be asserted that this assurance merely relates to Israel's exit from Babylon, for at that period the Lord did not raise Israel to its pristine state, and then the whole of Israel did not return to their land; the ten tribes of Israel were omitted, and no more than 42,360 men of the tribe of Judah and Benjamin actually came back. Neither was Israel at the time spared from affliction, as it will be at the future redemption, which is clearly demonstrated by the contents of the above prophecy, and other passages, (see Ezekiel 36:22-28). In fact, the whole concluding part of the chapter speaks in an unconditional tone. And this is quite

natural; for where the Almighty has given predictions relating to the glory of His name, and not that of our name, no conditional language could be applied. We have, in other similar passages decided and unconditional assurances (see, for instance, Isaiah 54:9-10), "For this is as the waters of Noah unto me; for as I have sworn that the waters should no more go over the earth, so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee. For the mountains shall depart and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee." Thus we find, Isaiah chapter 62:8-9, "The Lord hath sworn by His right hand, and by the arm of His strength: Surely, I will no more give thy corn to be food for thine enemies, and the sons of the strangers shall no more drink thy wine for which thou hast laboured. But those that gather it shall eat it and praise the Lord, and they that have brought it together shall drink it in the courts of my holiness." See also Jeremiah 31:35-37, "Thus saith the Lord, who giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon, and of the stars as a light by night, who divideth the sea when the waves thereof roar: The Lord of Hosts is His name. If those ordinances depart from before me, saith the Lord, then the seed of Israel shall also cease from being a nation before me for ever. Thus saith the Lord, If the heavens above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off the seed of Israel for all that they have done, saith the Lord." When our opponent takes into consideration all these passages, how can he maintain that the Almighty has cast off and disowned Israel, and will no more vouchsafe to His people a redemption from this captivity? Surely the restoration will at last take place; then His anger will no more visit us, then His loving-kindness and His covenant of peace will no more be drawn from us, then He will no more cast us away, and no more deprive us of establishment as a nation. Our past sins will then no longer be remembered, but He will graciously pardon all our former errors and transgressions. For Jeremiah has, in the above prophecy, expressly announced in the name of the Lord, "I will pardon their sins, and remember their iniquity no more." Neither can the argument be founded on the words occurring in 2 Kings 17:20, "And the Lord rejected all the seed of Israel, and afflicted them, and He gave them into the hands of spoilers, until He cast them out of his sight." This rejection and casting away is only a temporary punishment limited to the period of the captivity, but is not final and perpetual; consequently it is not a dissolution of the ancient covenant. See, on this, Leviticus 26:44, "And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies I will not cast them away, nor will I abhor them to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them, for I am the Lord their God." The periods for their removal are fixed by the Almighty, and only known to Him, who, by means of frequent chastisements, desires to remove from them all that is unbecoming and objectionable. See Isaiah 1:25-26, "And I will turn my hand upon thee, and purely purge thy dross, and remove all the base metal; and I will

restore thy judges as at first, and thy counselors as at the beginning; afterwards thou shalt be called the City of Righteousness, the faithful city." Similar to this prophecy are the words of Ezekiel 22:15, "And I will scatter thee among the heathen, and disperse them in the countries, and will consume thy filthiness out of thee." All this tends to prove the object of our exile as solely to purify us, to rid us of inherent imperfections, and to free us from the pollution of our sins. Hence the prophet, with a view to our ultimate purification, says, in Lamentations 4:22, "Thy iniquity, O daughter of Zion, is ended; He shall no more cause thee to be a captive." Now, we will show that no argument can be established against us, from the words of Jeremiah 15:1, "And the Lord said unto me, Though Moses and Samuel stood before me, yet my mind would not be toward this people; cast them out of my sight, and let them go forth." These words were addressed to Jeremiah after the Lord had charged him thrice not to intercede on behalf of Judah and Benjamin, that they might be led into captivity like the other ten tribes. For the Lord had said to Jeremiah, chapter 7:15-16, "And I will cast you out of my sight as I have cast out all your brethren, even the whole seed of Ephraim: Therefore, pray not thou for this people, either lift up a cry or prayer for them, neither make intercession to me, for I will not hear thee." Now the Lord explained to him the reason why He would not listen to his intercessions, and he says (in verses 17 and 18), "Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes for the queen of heaven, and pour out drink offerings unto other Gods that they may provoke me to anger." In the same book, chapter 11:11, He says, "Therefore, thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will bring evil upon them, from which they shall not be able to escape; and though they shall cry unto me I will not hearken unto them." Also here the reason is pointed out why the Almighty would refuse to grant his prayer (Ibid. verse 13), we find, "For according to the number of thy cities were thy Gods, O Judah," etc. And in the same chapter we have a second warning of the Almighty that Jeremiah should not intercede (Ibid. verse 14), "Therefore, pray not for this people, nor offer up a cry or supplication for them, for I will not hearken in the time that they cry unto me in their trouble." For how could the Almighty be favorable to a petition for mercy while they continued in the sin which caused the infliction: nor could impenitent sinners find grace with Him. Hence the words, Ibid., "And they shall cry unto me, but I will not hear them." The imminent evil relates to sword, pestilence, and famine. See chapter 14 (verse 15), "For through the sword, pestilence, and famine, I destroy them." When, therefore, Jeremiah perceived that the prayer for the house of Judah was in vain, he prayed (chapter 14:7), "O Lord, though our iniquities testify against us, do it for thy name's sake." The prophet then concludes with the words, "We are called by Thy name; therefore, forsake us not." Upon this follows the reply of the Almighty: "Thus saith the Lord unto this people, Thus have they loved to wander, they have not refrained their feet, wherefore the Lord doth not accept

them; He will now remember their iniquity and visit their sins." Hereby is meant—Since the Jews have mistrusted me, and have preferred to seek their protection among the Egyptians and the Assyrians, in order to escape the danger of adversaries, and since the Jews have not refrained from following profitless objects, I will remove them and render them the captives of their enemies. But, before I shall lead them into exile, I will remember their iniquity by famine, and visit their sin by the sword and by pestilence.

After having acquainted the prophet that his people had no hope of deliverance from the evils decreed upon them, the third injunction was given to Jeremiah not to offer up a supplication for the deliverance of the people (see Ibid. chapter 14:11-12), "Then said the Lord unto me, Pray not for this people for their good; when they fast I will not hear their cry, and when they offer burnt offering and an oblation, I will not accept them, but I will consume them by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence." Here again, allusion is solely made to their prayers coming from an impenitent heart, and offered up during their perseverance in wickedness.

The present passage reminds us of the one in Isaiah 1:15-16, "And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you; yea, when ye make many prayers I will not hear; your hands are full of blood; make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil." The verses we have quoted demonstrate that favorable reception of prayers is only denied so long as those evil deeds continue which bring the punishment to pass, but the supplications meet with grace when the supplicant renounces his sinful conduct. The pious prophet Jeremiah seeing, then, that his influence was insufficient among the unfortunate transgressors, appealed once more to the Almighty not to reject them and not to abhor them, for the sake of His holy name, since the Lord had been acknowledged on earth as the God of Israel. He prayed also to the Almighty not to suffer Jerusalem, known as the seat of the glory of the Lord, to be reviled; moreover, not to break His covenant made with the Israelites when he brought them out of Egypt. Hence, he says in Jeremiah 14:21, "Do not abhor us for Thy name's sake, do not disgrace the throne of Thy glory; remember us, and break not Thy covenant with us." Thereupon the Lord replies, that the prayer of Jeremiah would not avail to rescue the Israelites from the calamities of the evil ordained for them on account of their iniquities; and even if Moses and Samuel, who were superior prophets, were to raise their voice in the behalf of the transgressors, to avert the punishment of the sword, pestilence, and famine, their prayer will not avail. To this Divine resolve these words refer—"Cast them out of my sight (presence), and let them go forth. And it shall come to pass, if they say unto thee, Whither shall we go forth? Then thou shalt tell them, Thus saith the Lord: Such as are for death, to death; and such as are for the sword, to the sword; and such as are for the famine, to the famine; and such as are for the captivity, to the captivity." (Jeremiah 15:1,2) So that all instigators to

sin will meet with the fatal sentence assigned for them, while those who have been betrayed into sin will have to go into captivity, and save nothing but their lives. For the Lord desires not to exterminate them altogether. See Jeremiah 5:18, "And even in those days I will not make an end of you." Nor were the prayers of Moses of any avail when the Israelites first sinned in worshipping the golden calf, nor on their giving way to the insinuations of the spies sent from the desert to search the Land of Promise; also when the instigators of sin were punished with death, and the survivors who had yielded to the bad example were visited with the merited punishment. The intercession on behalf of the transgressors would have proved fruitless unless the instigators had been first removed by sword, pestilence, and famine. But as soon as the necessary chastisement would be inflicted, and the remaining sinners would have expiated their sins by the miseries attending the exile, He will graciously receive them at the epoch of the restoration, and although they should not them be purified entirely from their sins, He will have compassion on them for the sake of His name, as is said in 1 Samuel 12:22, "For the Lord will not forsake His people on account of His great name, since the Lord has vouchsafed to make you His people." The same is said in Isaiah 48:9-11, "For my name's sake I will defer mine anger, and for my praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off. Behold I refine thee, but not with silver. I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction. For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it, for why should my name be polluted, and I will not give my glory unto another." The reestablishment of the Holy City is an inducement to exult us as His own people. See Isaiah 42:1, "For Zion's sake, I will not delay, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until her righteousness shall go forth like a bright light, and her salvation like a brilliant flame." Nor will the Almighty ever be unmindful of the covenant made with our ancestors. See Leviticus 26:44, "And even in the land of their enemies I will not reject them, nor rebuke them to consume them, and to destroy my covenant with them, for I am the Lord their God." This promise was subsequently repeated in the prophecy of Ezekiel 16:60, "And I will remember my covenant made with thee in the days of thy youth, and I will establish unto thee an everlasting covenant." Again Ibid. verses 62-63, "And I will establish my covenant with thee, and thou shalt know that I am the Lord, in order that thou mayest remember me, and feel shame; but thou shalt open thy mouth no more on account of any degradation of thine, while I shall forgive thee for all thou hast done, saith the Lord." This last quotation clearly shows, that, although we have rebelled in the eyes of the Lord, he, nevertheless, will grant us forgiveness for His own sake, and for the sake of His covenant.

The promised favor will not be withheld from us, and we shall have passed through all our ordeals; we shall, at the appointed time, be planted again on our soil enjoying the perfect favor of the Almighty, and He will fulfill the promise given in Jeremiah 32:41, "And I shall rejoice over

them to do good unto them, and I will in truth plant them in their land, with all my heart and with all my soul." We have thus had an opportunity to demonstrate that the threatened evils will finally be counterbalanced and replaced by benefits.

Chapter 28: Herod's slaying of the children of Bethlehem foretold (Jeremiah 31:15)

Jeremiah 31:15, "Thus saith the Lord, A voice is heard in Ramah, lamentation and bitter weeping, Rachael is weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted on account of her children, because they are not to be found."

The Christians adduce this passage as a prophecy relating to their creed, and as if Jeremiah had here predicted the slaying of the children in Bethlehem, decreed by King Herod. For that king is said to have learnt that in Bethlehem of Judah a child had been born that was intended to be in future a king of the Jews, and as he could not ascertain who the future pretender was and where to be found, he ordered all the children under the age of two years, in and about Bethlehem, to be massacred. To this event the words quoted above refer, as the reader will find by examining Matthew 2.

Refutation:—We have, on a former occasion, shown that the Christians support the doctrine of their religion by sentences dis severed from their contexts and connection, without regard to the concurrence of the entire paragraph from which their quotations are taken. If, according to their suppositions, Rachel, was weeping for the ruthless slaughter committed among the children of Bethlehem Judah, the question arises, why was not Leah represented as the grieving mother, since it was from her that those victims of the tyranny of Herod were descended? Another question arises: what connection has the bereavement there spoken of with the consoling promises given by the Lord? (Jeremiah 31:16-17), "And they shall return from the land of their enemy, and the children shall return to the boundary." The following explanation of the passage will, however, produce conviction:—The prophet speaks here allegorically. The children alluded to here are the ten tribes in exile. These ten tribes are comprised under the designation of Ephraim (the tribe descended from Rachel); therefore she is weeping for her children who are banished from their country by the kings of Assyria. The ten tribes were called Ephraim, because their first king, after their defection from the King of Judah, was Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, from the tribe of Ephraim. This is confirmed by the Prediction in Jeremiah 7:15, "And I shall cast you away from my presence, as I have cast away all your brethren, the whole seed of Ephraim."

The last Hebrew word in the verse cited in the beginning of this chapter (Jeremiah 31:15), is **לֹא יִמָּצֵא** which in reality, does not mean they are not (to be found); but he (or it, is not to be found), because the singular relates here to the word **עַם** (people), which is implied; for when the tribes of Judah and Benjamin returned from the Babylonian captivity, the ten tribes did not return with them, nor was the place of their settlement fully known; for this reason the whole number of the missing children (or people) is expressed in the singular. Alluding to the restoration of the whole people in the days of the Messiah, the prophet Jeremiah continues, in the name of God (Ibid. 31:16-17), "Refrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears, for thy work shall be rewarded, saith the Lord. And they shall come again from the land of their enemies. And there is hope in thine end, saith the Lord, that thy children shall come again to their own border." These verses, which are all connected with one another, give the most intelligible proof that the prophet did not allude to the death of the children of his people, but to their dispersion. By this interpretation we can make sense of the 18th verse of the same chapter, "I have heard Ephraim lonely bemoaning himself thus: Thou hast chastised me, yea, I was chastised as a young bullock untrained to the yoke." Again, Ibid. verse 20, "Is Ephraim my dear son, is he my darling child?" And again, Ibid. verse 21, "Set thee up waymarks, make unto thee high heaps, set thine heart towards the highway, even the way towards which thou wentest; turn again, O Virgin of Israel, turn again towards thy cities." These words refer to the return of the captives of Israel. The ultimate and complete return of the tribes of Israel was also predicted by Ezekiel 37:19, "Thus saith the Lord God, I will take the stick of Joseph which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his fellows, and will put them with him, even with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in mine hand." This chapter points out the gathering of the ten tribes, and their re-union with the tribes of Judah and Benjamin, as also their subordination under one king in the days of the Messiah.

We have already, in a former part of this work, noticed that the restoration of the ten tribes was not intended to happen at the return from the captivity of Babylon, and that altogether only 42,000 went back to the Holy Land.

Certain Christians have asserted that the name of Israel, mentioned in particular parts of Scripture which relate to the restoration, is restricted to the ten tribes; but this is not true, for it is written, that Israel shall be remembered by the tribe of Judah. See Jeremiah chapter 30:18, "And I shall bring back the captivity of Jacob's tents;" And in the same book, chapter 23:6, we find, "In his days shall Judah be saved and Israel shall dwell in safety." Amos 2, speaks first of the three transgressions of Israel, and then of those of Judah, meaning by those of Israel, the ten tribes. But when the name, Israel, alone occurs, it includes also the

two tribes of Judah and Benjamin, it being the collective name of the whole people.

Chapter 29: New covenant prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31 fulfilled in Gospel of Jesus

Jeremiah 31:32, "Behold the days come, and I will make a new covenant with the House of Israel and with the House of Judah." The Christians assert that the prophet Jeremiah here foretold the giving of a new law for the people of Israel—viz., the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth.

Refutation:—Scripture does not allude here to the substitution of a new law for the old one, but merely the making of a new covenant, a covenant independent of the law. Thus we find in the history of Phineas (Numbers 25:12), "Behold I give him my covenant of peace." The covenant thus made could not possibly mean the emission of a new law intended for Phineas alone. In Leviticus 26:42, we meet with a like mention of a covenant, "And I shall remember my covenant with Jacob, my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember," etc. From this mode of expression, nobody would venture to infer that the Almighty gave a special law to each of the patriarchs. Covenants also are made between man and man. Thus we find, in Genesis 21:32, "They two [Abraham and Abimelech] made a covenant with each other." Returning now to the true sense of the verse at the head of this chapter, we find that the Almighty has reserved for Israel the bestowal of a new covenant of protection when they shall be restored to their land, a covenant which, unlike the former one, will never be dissolved. On that account the prophecy continues (in Jeremiah 31:31 and following verses), that the future covenant will not be according [Jeremiah 31:32-33] "to the covenant I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt, which covenant they broke," etc. After this introduction, the prophet proceeds, "But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the House of Israel; I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts, and will be their God and they shall be my people." These quotations suffice to show, that the Almighty had not intended to issue a new law, but to impress His ancient divine law on their hearts, that it never should be forgotten throughout all time. The reader, on referring to chapter 19, will find that we demonstrated there the perpetuity of the divine law as it was given on Sinai; consequently the promulgation of a new law supplanting the former cannot possibly take place.

Chapter 30: The Jewish feasts, new moons and Sabbaths revoked by Jesus (Hosea 2:11)

Hosea 2:13, "And I will cause all her mirth to cease, her feast days, her new moons, and her Sabbaths, and all her solemn festivals." From this passage the Christians argued,

that, on the coming of Jesus Christ, the dispensation of the laws for keeping Sabbaths, new moons, and festivals, was revoked, and the Lord found no more any pleasure in Israel's observance of those days; as was declared in Isaiah 1:14, "Your new moons and your appointed seasons my soul hateth."

Refutation:—The prophet here merely announces that during the severe adversities resulting from the exile, the rejoicing formerly attendant on the festive seasons, will cease, and affliction come in its stead. This may be seen on referring to the accompanying verses, and is confirmed by the subsequent events. After the desolation of the temple, when the Israelites were prevented from the due observance of their religion, the obligation of the Sabbath and the enjoyments of the festivals were forgotten. See Lamentations 2:6, "The Lord has caused the solemn days and the Sabbaths to be forgotten in Zion," which took place because "He hath increased to the daughter of Judah, morning and lamentation." Had it been the intention of the prophets Isaiah and Hosea to predict the cessation of the Sabbaths and festivals, how could they and later prophets so emphatically urge the strict observance of these solemn days? See for instance, Isaiah 41: Nor does it follow from the expression, "Your new moons and your appointed festivals my soul hateth," that the Almighty was weary of the sacred observances, and desired to have them abrogated; but it is obvious, that the evil-doers of that period assembled at the sanctuary for idolatrous purposes. Their celebration of the Sabbaths and festivals could not be acceptable while they worshipped idols, and not the true, Divine Being, as appears from the context of the first chapter of Isaiah. Were the Christian interpretation true, that the abolition of the sacred days is expressed in the first chapter of Isaiah why then, does the very same book conclude with the following prophecy which is to be fulfilled at the coming of the Messiah? "And it shall come to pass that from one Sabbath to another, and from one new moon to another, all flesh shall come to bow down before Me, saith the Lord." In like manner, Zechariah prophesied in the last chapter of his book, verse 16, "And it shall come to pass, that every one who is left of all the nations which came up against Jerusalem, shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of Hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles." This shows that the festivals are to continue even at the time of the Messiah, when not only the Jews, but also the Gentiles then in existence, will solemnly observe the days of Holy Convocation. We have, moreover, to refer the reader to the nineteenth chapter of this work, where we remarked that even Jesus and his disciples held the Sabbath holy, and that, only several centuries after his death, a pope ordered the first day of the week instead of the seventh to be kept as the day of rest. Thus we prove that this innovation runs counter to the very doctrines inculcated by Jesus.

Chapter 31: Judas' betrayal of Jesus for 30 pieces of silver foretold (Amos 2:6)

Amos 2:6, "Thus saith the Lord, For three transgressions of Israel, and for four I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they sold the righteous and the poor for the value of a pair of shoes."

Some Christian writers have attributed this prophecy to the fate of Jesus, who was sold for thirty pieces of silver; and they have asserted that the fourth transgression being the sale of their righteous One will never be pardoned to Israel, and the consequence of this sin has been our present captivity.

Refutation:—The interpretation betrays a want of due appreciation of the connecting sentences, and the parallel sayings by other prophets. The above verse means, that a casual concurrence of the three crimes—idolatry, incest, and homicide—was not the primary cause of Israel's expulsion from the Holy Land, but the chief cause was the universal depravity that prevailed throughout the nation, of which the mercenary leaders of the people gave the iniquitous example. The prophet Amos says, therefore (chapter 5:12), "They persecute the just, they take a bribe, and oppress the poor in the gate." The word רִישׁוֹן (righteous) used there has no reference to the man who leads a godly life, but only to the man whose cause is unimpeachable before the tribunal of justice, and in whose favor the sentence of the judges ought to be given. The word רִישׁוֹן here is of the same signification as in Exodus 23:8, where it is said, that the bribe given to the judge, "perverteth the words of the righteous." The expression, "For they oppress the needy for a pair of shoes," means, that the judge, for the most insignificant bribe, turns the scale of justice, and deprives the poor hapless man of his right, by pronouncing in favor of the guilty who offers the bribe. The prophet also inveighs against rich sinners. Amos 8:4, "Hear this, O ye who swallow up the needy, even to make the poor of the land to fail, saying, When will the new moon be gone that we may sell the corn, and the Sabbath that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances of deceit: that we may buy the poor for ourselves, and the needy for a pair of shoes, yea, and sell the refuse of the wheat?" This passage is, in wording and sense, closely related to that of chapter 2, and both convey the idea of an iniquitous proceeding in buying and selling. We notice, in the above quotation, that the new moon was then more strictly observed, and ordinary pursuits were suspended, and, judging from the admonitions of the prophets, it would appear that they indulged in convivial and social entertainments. Compare with this 1 Samuel 20:5, beginning with "Tomorrow is new moon," and the second book of Kings 4:23, "Why goest thou today to him [to the prophet], since it is neither new moon, nor Sabbath;" as the

injustice described in the Book of Amos relates merely to the mercenary conduct of the superiors in legal decisions, and to the groveling disposition of buyers and sellers in their several dealings, it must be deemed utterly futile to construe those words of Amos as alluding to the history of their Savior. Besides, if the prophet had intended to make any allusion to Jesus, he ought to have ascribed the transgression to the tribes of Judah and Benjamin, who alone resided in the Holy Land in the days of Jesus, while the ten tribes were scattered among their enemies, and could take no part whatever in the proceedings against Jesus.

Nor can it be asserted that the expression, "And for the fourth transgression will not turn aside the punishment thereof," conveys the announcement, that Israel will never be pardoned for the sale of Jesus, for we find the very same mode of expression applied to the transgressions of Damascus, Gaza, Tyre, Edom, etc., who had no concern whatever in the sale of Jesus. When we read Scripture with proper attention we arrive at the very opposite conviction to the opinion of the Christians respecting our eternal condemnation. See, for instance, the following passages: Psalm 130:8, "And He will redeem Israel from all their sins." Jeremiah 33:8, "And I will cleanse them from all their iniquities which they committed against me, and I will pardon all their iniquities with which they sinned and rebelled against me." In the same book (chapter 50:20) we read, "In those days and at that time, saith the Lord, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and not be seen; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found; for I shall forgive all whom I shall cause to remain."

Chapter 32: An everlasting captivity for the Jews without redemption prophesied (Amos 5:2)

Amos 5:2, "The virgin of Israel is fallen: she shall no more rise; she is forsaken upon her land; there are none to raise her up." From this verse it has been argued, that the downfall of Israel is determined for ever, that our captivity will never terminate, and that we have no chance of redemption.

Refutation:—It appears from other words of the same prophet that this prediction does not relate to the perpetual condemnation of Israel; for he says, at the close of his book (chapter 9:14, 15), "And I will bring back the captivity of my people Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them, and they shall plant vineyards and drink the wine thereof, and they shall also make gardens and gather fruit of them. And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be rooted out of their land which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God." Since a contradiction in the prophetic promises cannot be admitted, the above passages can only be explained in the following manner. The prophet, after

having related the evils which await Israel on account of their iniquitous conduct, reproaches them in chapter 4, of the same book, five successive times, "And ye have not returned unto me saith the Lord."

He continues, in the same chapter, verse 12, "Thus I will do unto thee, O Israel! And because I will do this unto thee, prepare to meet thy God, O Israel!" Which implies penitence and good deeds; for them He will do good unto thee and change thy sufferings into happiness, for He is thy God who dispenses evil and good according to your doings." In order to represent Him to the mind as the universal Disposer of Events, the prophet goes on to say (Ibid. 4:13), "For lo! He that formeth the mountains, and createth the wind, and declareth His purposes unto man, that changes the morning into darkness, and treadeth upon the high places of the earth, the Lord, the God of Hosts, is His name." As Creator of the world He is cognizant of everything, He is the Maintainer and Supporter of all things, the most distant events He inspects clearly: and He, through His prophets, acquaints man with His designs. As He makes light and darkness alternate for the benefit of His creatures, He makes also the good and the evil to effect His will among the children of men. Thus He is to be worshipped under the name of the God of Hosts as the God of the whole Universe. Thus He does, as Supreme Judge, dispose us to submit to His decrees; and although we may occasionally suffer in consequence of our errors and failings, we still feel that His protection extends over us in strict accordance with His goodness. This idea is conveyed by the whole tenor of the fourth chapter of the book of Amos, and forms an appropriate introduction to chapter 5, which begins thus, "Hear ye the word which I take up against you, even a lamentation, O house of Israel! The virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise," etc. He speaks here of the virgin of Israel and announces that the physical energies of the people are exhausted by the tyranny of strangers and by the loss of those sent into exile; their own kings and rulers had no longer power to effect the repentance required, and therefore a Divine intervention was necessary to accomplish their restoration. The prophet therefore, *ibid.* verse 3, brings the sad message,—"For thus saith the Lord, The city that went out by a thousand shall leave a hundred, and that which went forth by a hundred shall leave ten to the house of Israel." According to the prophet, the calamities contingent on the fall of Israel would be fearful, for they would be cast down by the sword, or decimated by famine and pestilence, and only a small portion would be spared for the captivity. Against such national prostration the prophet points out the sole remedy, consisting in sincere repentance. The terrifying announcement of Israel's destruction is, therefore, entirely mitigated by the Divine counsel, Amos 5:4, "Thus saith the Lord unto Israel, Seek ye me, and ye shall live." It is well understood that the term to seek, means to become penitent. Isaiah, in 55:6-7, uses a similar expression, "Seek ye the Lord, while he is yet to be found." He explains there his admonition by saying, "The wicked man shall leave his way, and the iniquitous man his thoughts, and return unto the Lord, and He will have

compassion on him." This shows that the prophet Amos has not predicted the irretrievable ruin of Israel, but that it may hope to obtain, through penitence, its restoration and revival, as a nation.

Chapter 33: Messiah to be born in Bethlehem, hence must be Jesus (Micah 5:2)

Micah 5:2, "But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall come forth unto me a ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been from everlasting." This verse has been designated by the Christians as confirming their faith; and they assert that the prophet meant to say that their Messiah would be born at Bethlehem, and they declare that it is impossible for Israel to expect that the Messiah will be born there, seeing that the city of Bethlehem has already been destroyed.

Refutation:—For three reasons it is impossible to vindicate this prophecy in favor of Jesus, setting aside the numerous other unsubstantial arguments they allege to prove that he was the true Messiah. First, – The above scriptural passage has no special allusion to him. The birth of Jesus in Bethlehem does not entitle him to the claim of being the Messiah, for hundreds and thousands of children were born at Bethlehem, and that casualty did not constitute them Messiahs. Secondly, – We read there, "From thee shall come forth unto me a ruler." Now, as to Jesus of Nazareth, he was by no means a ruler. On the contrary, the people ruled over him, as is evinced by the mode of his death. Thirdly, – It is not said that Bethlehem would be the birth-place of the Messiah, for we find that the prophet adds there, "And his going forth shall be of olden times." But the sense of the verse is this: Thou Bethlehem, although one of the minor localities among the cities of Judah, from thee a man shall come forth (i.e., trace his descent back to thee), who shall be a ruler in Israel, and that same man will be the King Messiah who will be a descendant of David who came from Bethlehem. See 1 Samuel 17:12, where he is termed "The son of an Ephrathite from Bethlehem Judah." The words "since olden times," relate to the great space of time elapsed between the reign of David and the coming of the Messiah. We must also call the attention of the reader to the chapter preceding and the passages following the verse on which we are treating, and it will then be perceived that the whole prophecy is applied to the terrific convulsions predicted to happen at the epoch of the "latter days." In connection with this prophecy must be read the announcements of Ezekiel 38 and 39, and Zechariah 14: We must not be deterred from the adoption of this interpretation by the frequent recurrence in Amos 4 of the participle which, by its signification "And now," may be considered to indicate, that the subject of the prophecy is close at hand, for we frequently find the same וְעַתָּה (now) is used merely to

make an event present to the imagination, which event may, nevertheless, be exceedingly remote from its actual fulfillment.

See, for instance, Isaiah 43:19, "Behold I am doing a new thing, now it shall spring forth." This prophecy treated of an event to be fulfilled long after the time in which the prophet lived, *ibid.* 49:19, "For now thou [O land] art straightened, and without inhabitants, but those who swallow thee up are yet far away." See also Ezekiel 39:25, "now I shall bring back the captivity of Jacob, and have mercy upon all the house of Israel." And *ibid.* 43:9, "Now they shall remove from me their lewdness and the carcasses of their kings." Thus we have also an allusion to the days of the Messiah in Micah 5:3 (English version 5:4), "For now he shall be magnified to the ends of the earth." In the same sense must be viewed the concluding words of chapter 4 (verse 14, in the English version verse one of chapter 5), "Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops, He have laid siege against us. With a rod they shall smite the cheek, even Him who is the Judge of Israel." The last words are borne out by Zechariah 14:2, "And half of the city shall go into captivity." For then the judges and leaders of the people will be exposed to the most mortifying humiliation, in order to purify the remnant of Israel by the trials of persecution. See *ibid.* 13:9, "And I shall bring the third part into the fire, and I shall purify them as silver is purified, and try them as gold is tried, etc." Having now shown that the verse cited at the commencement of the chapter must be interpreted in connection with the preceding passages, we will discuss it in relation to the subsequent verses. We have in Micah 5:2 [5:3] (English version 5:3), "Therefore, he will give them up until the time that she who travaileth has given birth." The meaning of this verse is, that Israel, compared with a woman in the pain of labor, shall suffer until the period of the delivery (i.e. redemption), and ultimately obtain the looked-for consolation. In like terms, says Jeremiah, in chapter 30:7, "And it is a time of trouble for Israel, and it shall be delivered there from." Thus says also Daniel in chapter 12, verse 1, of his book, "And it shall be a time such as never had been since it became a nation, and at this time thy people shall be rescued." The words and Micah 5:2 (English version 5:3), "And the remnant of his brethren shall return with the children of Israel," mean the remnant of the brethren of the Messiah—viz., the children of Judah and Benjamin who are scattered among the nations, shall return to their own land, together with the ten tribes of Israel. The word וְיָשׁוּב in this verse has the same significance as וְיָשׁוּב meaning together with. In the same sense it occurs in Exodus 35:22, "And the men came together with the woman." This prophecy of Micah is identical with that given in Hosea 2:2 (verse 1:11 in the English), "and the children of Judah and the children Israel shall assemble together, and they shall make unto them a chief, and go up from the land." Returning again to Micah 5:3, we further read, "And he shall stand and feed in the strength of the

Lord," etc. This must naturally be attributed to the King Messiah, who will be endowed with extraordinary powers. Then "they shall abide," which means they shall then continue in the land in undisturbed peace. With this we compare Micah 4:4, "And every man shall abide under his vine tree, and under his fig tree, and none shall make him afraid," for the awe of the Messiah shall prevail throughout the whole earth. The following words in Micah 5:4 (English version 5:5), "And this shall be the time of peace, when Ashur (i.e., Assyria) shall come into our land," are equivalent to the words in Zechariah 9:13, "And he shall speak of peace to the nations." Ashur represents the enemy who brought terror into our country: such enemies shall, in the times of the Messiah, be utterly impotent. "We shall set up near him seven shepherds and eight principal men." The rendering of לְיָדָיו "by or near him," is justified by the occurrence of the same Hebrew word in that verse in Numbers 2:20, "And near him" or together with him, in the tribe of Manasseh."

The words shepherds and principal men (or princes of men) relate to the leaders who will be appointed by the King Messiah. The numbers "seven and eight" must be taken as indefinite signs of number, meaning only many, as we find in Ecclesiastes, "Give a portion unto seven and also unto eight." The word shepherds (i.e., pastors) is synonymous with principal men (or, literally, princes of men), and means therefore overseers of the people. Micah, chapter 5:5-6 (English version 5:6-7), continues, "And they shall lay waste the land of Ashur with the sword."

The word וַיִּשְׁרֹף (and they lay waste) occurs in the same sense in Jeremiah 11:16, "And they shall break his branches", and *ibid.* 2:16, "And they shall break the crown of thy head." Micah then speaks of the land of Nimrod, which was Babel, as is clear from Genesis 10:10, "And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel." Thus the Messiah shall deliver us from the Assyrians when they come into our land, and when they break in upon our borders. The King Messiah will rescue us from the power of arbitrary tyrants, so that we shall no more be molested by invading enemies. Ashur and Babel are selected by Micah as examples of Israel's enemies, because those two powers destroyed the holy land. The prophet then gives the consolation, Micah 5:6 (English version 5:7), "And the remnant of Jacob shall be in the midst of many nations as dew from the Lord, as the showers upon the grass, that tarrieth not for man, nor waiteth for the Son of Man." This verse means that those who escape the tyranny of the enemies shall be placed under the special protection of the Almighty, and no human power shall prevail against the remnant of Israel. As the descent of dew is beyond human influence, so Israel shall be beyond the reach of human influence. The prophet then introduces a second comparison and says, "And the remnant of Jacob shall be among the Gentiles in the midst of many people, as a lion among the beasts of the forest." Israel is thereby compared with the most powerful creature unto which all other

animals are inferior, and therefore he resumes (Micah 5:8), "Thine hand shall be exalted above thine adversaries, and all thine enemies shall be cut off." This prophecy is in connection with the following: Micah 5:9 [5:10], "And I will cut off thy horses out of the midst of thee, and I will destroy thy chariots, and I will cut off the cities of thy land, and throw down all thy strongholds." For at that period Israel will attain a supremacy which will render war needless, and all hostile preparation will be superseded by universal peace. Hence Zechariah says, chapter 2:4, "And Jerusalem shall be inhabited as a town without walls."

The whole tendency of the prophecies we have now treated on, shows evidently that unfilled events are spoken of relating to the time of our Messiah when we shall be gathered together to the Holy Land, and when, after the overthrow of the opposing powers, universal peace shall reign on earth. No man can argue that those promises were fulfilled by Jesus of Nazareth, or his disciples. For the founders of the Christian religion passed their lives in unmitigated trouble, nor can it be asserted that an allusion to the Eternal God is implied by, "And his coming forth is from ancient time from the days of old." We cannot possibly attribute to the Infinite Being a "coming forth"; moreover, we shall have occasion to show, from our refutation of the Gospels, the total impropriety of giving Jesus the title of God, and from what we have advanced hitherto, it is quite evident that Jesus was just as far from being a Messiah, as he was from being a Divinity.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 34: Jesus alleged to be the glory of the latter house (Haggai 2:9)

Haggai 2:9, "The glory of this latter house shall be greater than that of the former, saith the Lord of Hosts, and in this place will I give peace, saith the Lord of Hosts." Christians have raised the question, in what did the glory of latter house consist, seeing that the Jews, during the time of the first Temple, were independent, and during that of the second Temple they were vassals of the Persians, Syrians, and Romans, the last of whom ultimately destroyed the temple and banished the Jews. They therefore interpret it to signify that the existence of Jesus, during the time of the second Temple, constituted its glory.

Refutation:—The word כְּבוֹד (glory) has two significations. In the first place, it means worldly distinction and opulence. In this meaning, we find it in Genesis 31:1: "and from what belongeth unto our Father, he has gotten all this כְּבוֹד (wealth)." The same is meant to Proverbs 3:16, "in his left hand are riches and glory." In the second sense, כְּבוֹד means the real or spiritual distinction. For instance, in 1 Samuel 4:21, we have "the glory hath departed from Israel." See also Psalm 85:9,

"that glory may dwell in our land"; and Zechariah 2:5, "and for glory I shall be in the midst of her." Some commentators have assigned the second sense to the passage under consideration, and they say that the superior glory of the second Temple consisted in the entire absence of idolatry; some have said that the word כְּבוֹד relates to the first or fictitious kind of glory, because Herod is said to have decorated the temple in the most gorgeous style. But such an interpretation is set aside by the non-fulfillment of Haggai's prophecy (chapter 2:9), "And in that place will I give peace, saith the Lord of Hosts." For during the existence of the second Temple no peace reigned in the land; but according to Daniel, "the street and the entrenchment were to be built amidst the troubles of the times." Much less can it be said that the glory of the Temple was reserved for the days of Herod, for from his house contention never departed, and after his death sufferings never ceased with the Jews, until their final overthrow. Nor can we admit that the glory of the second Temple consisted in its longer duration – a point discussed in the Talmud (Baba Bathra), for Scripture makes no mention of the glory being attributable to the length of the time during which the Temple was constructed or lasted. And even if the duration of the second Temple had exceeded by double the time that of the first Temple, the word glory could not have been assigned to this distinction. Decides this, we must also notice that the piece promised to reign in the latter times, did by no means prevail during the existence of the second Temple. The real object of the prophecy under consideration is to show, that the human labor displayed in rearing the second Temple was a esteemed but insignificant by the Almighty, for the prophet announces a complete change of heaven and earth. See *ibid* 2:6, "for thus sayeth the Lord of Hosts, there is one thing yet which is a little matter with me, that I shake the heavens and the earth, and the sea and the dry land." Then also will the prophecy be fulfilled, "and the valuable things of all nations shall come" (as contributions to the glory of the house of God). Hitherto such an event has not yet come to pass; but it will take place when all the nations of the earth, who are adverse to the Jews (and who are termed in Scripture, Gog and Magog), shall be subjugated and pacified. See Ezekiel 38:19-20, "in my jealousy, and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel: so that the fishes of the sea and the fowls of the heaven, in the beast of the field, and all the creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are on the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence," etc. The restoration of the latter Temple has, on that account, been brought into connection with the battle of Gog and Magog (i.e., the ultimate cessation of all warfare). At that time the temple will be erected in surpassing splendor, and testifying all is the Lord's according to the expression by Haggai, that "the gold and the silver belong unto Him." At that time the true glory of the house of God will be made manifest, and will excel that of the preceding temple. The Shechinah (the Divine presence) will reappear there, and there everlasting

peace will take up its abode. To this alludes Haggai, by saying at the end of this book, chapter 2:21-22, "speak to Zerubbabel, governor of Judah, saying, I will shake the heaven and the earth; and I will overthrow the throne of kingdoms, and I will destroy the strength of the kingdoms of the heathen, and I will overthrow the chariots of those who ride in them: and the horses and their riders shall come down, every one by the sword of the brother." A similar vision seen by the prophet Zechariah, is also unconnected with the second temple, but relates to events to come in the latter days; for after fearful collisions of the last hostile kingdoms, the Messiah, descendant of Zerubbabel, will come, and He will be the perfection of all rulers. Hence Haggai says, in the concluding words of his book, chapter 2:23, "and I will make thee—Zerubbabel—as a signet for I have chosen thee, says the Lord of Hosts." The fulfillment was not to take place in the immediate times of Zerubbabel, for he remained during all his life in the same position as governor of Israel, without being ever raised to that exalted rank of which Haggai speaks.

But we find in Scripture similar promises, which were to be accomplished among a later posterity. Thus, for instance, the Almighty said to Abraham, when he made a covenant with him to give him the land of Canaan as an inheritance (Genesis 15:7), "I am the Lord who have brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldeans to give thee this land for inheritance."

This prediction undoubtedly related merely to the posterity of Abraham, as a set forth in the very same chapter (verse 18), "in that day the Lord made a covenant with Abraham, saying, unto thy seed have I given this land," etc. We must, therefore, of necessity explain the prophecy of Haggai as referring to the third Temple, of which Ezekiel, in chapter 40 and in subsequent passages, et passim, has given such an elaborate and distinct description. He has given us the express announcement that the Divine presence would reveal itself there in its fullest glory. To see Ezekiel 43:4-7, "and the glory of the Lord came into the house by the way of the gate which faces the east. So the spirit took me up and brought me into the inner court, and behold the glory of the Lord filled the house. And I heard one who was speaking unto me, and a man stood by me. And he said unto me, Son of Man, the place of my throne and the place of the soles of my feet where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel forever, the house of Israel shall no more defile my Holy name," etc. This prevalence of universal peace will form the superior glory of the latter Temple. The inferiority of the second Temple may also be argued from the absence of the Holy ark, of the mercy seat, of the Urim and Thummim, etc.; but in the third Temple, which is to be raised at a future day, all the tokens of Divine glory will be restored and serve as a pledge for the endurance of perpetual peace. Hence the prophet Haggai says, "and in this place will I grant peace, saith the Lord of Hosts." Utterly untenable is also the assertion of the Christians, that the glory of the second Temple consisted

in the event of the birth of Jesus. For, when he was born, the Temple was fast approaching its dissolution and lacked that peace expressly promised. Besides this, Jesus himself admitted, that his object was not to afford peace; for he says in Matthew 10:34, "think not that I am come to send peace on earth, I came not to send peace, but a sword." This forms a positive evidence that the promise of universal peace remains still to be accomplished.

Chapter 35: Entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem on donkey foretold (Zechariah 9:9)

Zechariah 9:9, "Rejoice very much, old daughter of Zion. Shout, O daughter of Jerusalem. Behold thy king cometh unto thee; he is just and has been saved; he is poor and riding on an ass." On the authority of St. Matthew 21:5, the Christians maintain that the prophet, on pronouncing this prediction, had in view the entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem on the back of an ass.

Refutation:—the whole prophecy from which the above portion is taken, bears internal evidence to the fallacy of this interpretation for the prophet speaks solely of the ingathering of Israel and of the advent of the Messiah in the latter days. To arrive at this truth, the verse must be read in its relation with the antecedent and subsequent verses. Refer to the commencement of Zechariah 9:1, where we read, "The burden of the word of the Lord upon the land of Hadrach and Damascus, his resting place." The letter **א** occurring in this verse in the word **אָרְצָאָהּ** means upon, concerning, or relating to. It occurs in the same sense in Isaiah 21:13, "the burden upon Arabia," and the same meaning as the **א** in many other passages of Scripture.

The lands of Hadrach and Damascus shall, in the time of the Messiah, be united with the land of Israel, and be termed the resting place of the Divine glory, just as the ancient and more limited country of Israel was designated the resting place of the Divine Glory.

In this mode, the Psalmist says in Psalm 95:11, "Unto whom I swore in my wrath, they should not enter into my rest;" or, as we find this expression more largely expanded in Deuteronomy 11:12, it is the land "which the Lord the God inquireth after; the eyes of the Lord thy God are continually upon it." Now, in the times of the Messiah, the eyes of the Lord will rest favorably on the lands of Hadrach and Damascus, because all worship displeasing to the Divine Being will give way to the acknowledgment of pure truth. In the same way, many will also, in the other countries adjacent to our ancient fatherland, be incorporated in the possession of the house of Jacob, and according to the expression of Zechariah 9:1, "the eye of man shall be directed unto the Lord, as the eyes of all the tribes of Israel shall be towards the Lord;" and Zechariah 8:23, "for all nations will say unto the men of Judea, 'We

will go with you, for we have heard that God is among you.'" The words of Jeremiah 23:17 fully bear upon this subject, "Now they say into my scorers, the Lord hath said, Ye shall have peace," etc.

Zechariah 9:2, "Also Hamath borders thereon, and also Tyre and Zidon, yet they were wise." Those towns, though considered as foreign countries (see Amos 6:2), will, in future, form only one empire with that of Israel. As to the wisdom of Tyre and Zidon, it is often alluded to by the prophets as may be seen in Ezekiel 28. Such wisdom, available in worldly matters, will not prove of advantage against the supremacy of Israel. For, although "Tyre did build herself a stronghold and heaped up silver as the dust, and fine gold as the mire of the streets, the Lord will cause her to grow poor." Zechariah 9:3. In rendering the words **יִרְדָּהּ** "He will cause her to grow poor," we are guided by the terms occurring in 1 Samuel 2:7, "the Lord maketh poor and maketh rich." Zechariah 9:4, further says, "and he will smite her power in the sea, and she shall be devoured with fire." This shows that temporal means will be utterly disregarded, and that confidence in perishable substance will be lost with the disappearance of the substance itself. Grand structures shall become insignificant, the towers of refuge and the walls of protection shall be demolished, and devouring fire shall demonstrate that man can never raise a bulwark against the will the Lord, and that he can only fortify himself with the firmness of faith.

Again, we read in Zechariah 9:5, "Ashkelon shall see it and fear, and also Gaza be much afraid; and Ekron too, for he hath put to shame her trust." Terror shall emanate from the consciousness of their former unworthiness, and terror shall be followed by humiliation and desolation, as the natural consequences of depraved conduct. Therefore Zechariah says in the same chapter, verse 6, "The outcasts shall dwell in Ashdod, and I will cut off the glory of the Philistines, and I will take away the guilt of blood out of his mouth, and his abominations from between his teeth." All this part, which is introductory to the verse at the heading of this chapter, shows that a total conversion from ungodly feelings and practices will take place in the countries adjacent to Palestine, and that they will be spared only to become faithful followers of our God, and like the Jebusite of former days, to be subjected to Israel. The various nationalities will then be joined into one faithful body; all will serve with equal ardour the God of Israel, saying in the words of Zechariah 8:23, "We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." The multitude of worshippers will abundantly increase so that the land of Israel will not be able to contain them, and therefore the boundary will, according to Divine promise, be enlarged, and Palestine extend in proportion as the faith of the followers of Judaism shall spread; for to speak with Isaiah 54:1, "The children of the desolate wife are greater than the children of the married wife," that is to say, the children returning from captivity will far exceed those who once left their native land. Hence Isaiah says, *ibid.* verse 2,

"Enlarge the place of thy tent, and let them stretch forth the curtains of thine habitations: spare not, lengthen thy cords, and strengthen thy stakes; for thou shalt spread to the right and the left," etc. Jeremiah, too, affords a picture of the future enlargement of Jerusalem. See chapter 31:38, "Behold days shall come, saith the Lord, and the city shall be built unto the Lord, from the tower of Hananeel to the gate of the corner," etc., and he concludes this prediction with the assurance [verse 40], "it shall not be destroyed, nor shall it ever be broken down." As at that time the temple of the Lord will consequently be larger than it had been in former days, as is testified by Ezekiel 40 and in subsequent parts. The peace which will at that time rule in Palestine will be fairly established, so that no man shall have to apprehend any danger from abroad. Zechariah therefore predicts, chapter 9:8, "I will set up an army for my house, of those who proceed towards it, of those who return from it; and no oppressor shall move against them any more, for now I have seen it with mine eyes." With this prophecy we may compare Zechariah 2:9 [2:5], "For I, saith the Lord, will be unto her a protecting wall of fire round about." The expression, "for now I have seen it with mine eyes," relates to the time of the fulfillment, when the Jews will find relief from all tribulation; and then the Lord, who had turned his countenance from us, will again look upon us in mercy. In the same sense, we find in Exodus 2:25, "And God saw the children of Israel," by which is meant, "He looked upon them graciously." This forms a suitable introduction to the words, "Rejoice very much, O daughter of Zion, shout, O daughter of Jerusalem." The occasion for such joy is afforded by the concurrence of blissful events promised to happen in the days of the Messiah. Zion or Jerusalem is here addressed, individually, as the most important part of the Holy Land. Then He says, "Behold thy King cometh unto thee; He is righteous, and is saved;" for the King Messiah will be a righteous man; and, through his righteousness He will be saved from the destructive attacks of his assailants.

The Christians have perverted the sense of עֲשֵׂה he is saved, and have rendered it as if it were יִשְׁעֵנִי Saviour. The authors of the English version have, with consistent faithfulness, taken an opportunity for perverting the sense by translating it ambiguously, and with more ingenuity than honesty, "and having salvation," instead of "having been saved." Such subterfuges do not strengthen, however, the cause of religion. We must notice, at the same time, that the word יִשְׁעֵנִי would not aid their interpretation, for we find this word also in the passive sense, for instance, יִשְׁעֵנִי לְמִשְׁפַּחַת עַד and "the saved ones shall go up to judge the mount of Esau." The word יָבֵשׁ, occurring in the verse at the beginning of this chapter, means meek and modest. A similar description of the character of the Messiah is given in Isaiah 42:2, "He shall not cry aloud and not raise himself up, and not make his voice to be heard abroad; a feeble reed He shall not break," etc. the appearance of the Messiah on the back of an ass is to indicate his disdain of

all vain display, and also that, at the time of his advent, the use of horses for battle will no longer be required. This is amplified in the announcement, "And I will cut off the chariots from Ephraim and the horses from Jerusalem, and the bow of warfare shall be cut off." Thus is also the message given by Hosea 2:20 [2:18], "And the bow and the sword I will break from the land; and I shall cause them to lie down in security."

Still more forcibly this is predicted in Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall beat their swords into ploughshares and their spears into pruning hooks. Nation shall no more lift up the sword against nation, and they shall no more learn the art of war." For this reason Zechariah says, "And He shall speak peace unto the nations." This shows again that the Messiah will conciliate hostile nations, according to Daniel 7:27, "All rulers serve Him and obey Him." Thus Zechariah 9:10, says, "And His dominion shall be from sea to sea, and from the rivers to the ends of the earth." Then the prophet continues (chapter 9:11), "Thou also who art in the blood of thy covenant, I have sent thy prisoners from the waterless pit."

In these words he addresses Israel, who will be saved through the blood of Abraham's covenant, to which we have adhered in spite of all temptation during the captivity, which is denominated a pit without water. We come now to verse 12, of the same chapter, "Turn ye to the stronghold, ye prisoners of hope, even today do I declare, that I will render double unto thee." This may be interpreted in the following manner: — Israel, ye prisoners, ever hopeful of your ultimate salvation, ye shall return to God, who is the stronghold and the tower of strength to those who trust in Him, for today I tell you again, you shall receive a double portion of all joys lost during the toils of your captivity; and thus I repeat the promise conveyed to you through the prophet Isaiah (chapter 60:17), "Instead of the silver I shall bring gold," etc.; and again (chapter 61:7), "For your shame, ye shall have double, and in return for confusion, they shall rejoice in their portion; therefore, in their land they shall possess the double," etc.

The object of the word, "double," is merely to express that God will abundantly bestow his gracious favors: hence the word דָּבָר is not confined to the literal sense of twice or twofold. Thus we have in Jeremiah 17:18, "And I will destroy them with double destruction." Thus the word "double" signifies merely a frequent recurrence of the same thing. In chapter 9:13, Zechariah continues, "For I have bent thy way, O Judah, towards me. I have filled the bow, O Ephraim, and raised thy sons, O Zion, against thy sons, O Javan (i.e., Greece), and made thee as the sword of a mighty man."

Here he alludes to the days of the Messiah when all Judah and Ephraim, that is to say, all Israel, will return to their land. For we have already shown, in a former part, that, at the return from Babylon, only a small portion of the Jews

again settled in their own country. Now, in the time of the Messiah, all will take their abode in the land of their inheritance, and they will be no more divided into two kingdoms. This may be fully seen on referring to Ezekiel 37. The prophet there tells us, that the children of Zion will prevail over the children of Javan.

Sometimes we find in Scripture Gog and Magog as expressive of the opponents of the Jews, for both Javan and Magog appear in the genealogical enumeration of nations in Genesis 10:1, 2, as brethren and as sons of Japheth.

Having now shown that this chapter affords no foundation for the claims of Jesus to be the Messiah, since in his days those significant predictions remained altogether unfulfilled, we proceed to sum up the points we have discussed.

1. In the days of the Messiah, will take place the gathering of Judah and Ephraim, that is, of all Israel.
2. Many nations will join Israel as the people of the Lord.
3. Gog and Magog, that is, the powers opposing Israel, will be overthrown.
4. Undisturbed peace will then reign throughout the world.
5. The King Messiah will have dominion over all the world.

On the other hand, we have shown that, in the days of Jesus, not one of those favorable events occurred, but indeed the reverse took place. The King Messiah is to declare cessation of warfare and permanent peace, while Jesus the Nazarene says, in Matthew 10:34, "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I come not to send peace, but the sword."

The true Messiah is to have his dominion from sea to sea and from the river to the ends of the earth; but Jesus, the Nazarene, had no worldly power over the smallest territory; for he says in Matthew 20:28, "The Son of Man (i.e., Jesus) came not to be served, but to serve," etc. from all this it is obvious that the Christians have no foundation on which to establish their dogma of a Messiah.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 36: Prophecy of the Messiah being pierced and slain (Zechariah 12:10)

Zechariah 12:10, "And I will pour upon the house of David and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem the spirit of grace and supplications, and they shall look up to me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him as in the mourning for an only son, and be in bitterness for him, as is the bitterness for the first born."

The Christians site this verse as a testimony of the regret which Israel will feel at a future time for having pierced and slain Jesus, who combined human and Divine nature; therefore the Israelites will mourn for him, as one mourns for an only son.

Refutation:—On an unprejudiced perusal of the whole prophecy, of which the above forms part, our Christian brethren would have perceived that the contents are solely referable to the confusion of empires during the latter days, or, as we are accustomed to call that era, the appearance and fall of Gog and Magog. We will elucidate this by taking an attentive view of the entire chapter. It commences with the warning, [Zechariah 12:2] "Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about." "The cup of trembling" means the confusion and terror which will seize all nations at that period, "and also Judah who shall be engaged in the siege against Jerusalem." For the foreign nations invading the Holy Land, in order to conquer its capital, will coerce and compel the children of Judah to assist and the siege of Jerusalem. In that time, says Zechariah 12:3, "I will make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people; all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it." The ill fate formally attending the warfare of the Jews now befall the Gentiles; for the prophet continues, [Zechariah 12:4] "In that day, saith the Lord, I will smite every horse with terror, and his rider with madness, and I will open mine eyes upon the house of Judah, and I will smite every horse of the nations with blindness." This supernatural intervention of the Almighty will bring the Jewish leaders to reason, on seeing the extraordinary power displayed on behalf of Jerusalem. [Zechariah 12:5] "And the governors of Judah shall say in their heart, the inhabitants of Jerusalem are too strong for me, through the Lord their God." The leaders of Judah will then no longer side with the devourers of their people, but will pour out their wrath on the enemies of the Jews, for the Almighty has declared, *ibid.* verse 6, "In that day will I make the governors of Judah like a hearth of fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; and they shall devour all the people round about, on the right hand and on the left, and Jerusalem shall be inhabited again in her own place, even in Jerusalem." For during the troubles of our captivity, the ancient city of the Lord has become like an exile from her own soil; in the future, however, she will be restored to herself again, in her pristine glory. The Lord will then

show mercy even to those, who, in their forgetfulness of duty and national affection, have risen against the metropolis of that people and their faith; and he will spare the Jews who first assisted in the siege, as he will spare the inhabitants of Jerusalem who suffered from the siege. The prophet therefore says, [Zechariah 12:7] "The Lord also shall save the tents of Judah first, that the inhabitants of Jerusalem may not magnify themselves against Judah." The success attending the cause of the Jews will be granted in such a manner as not to disturb the unanimity and brotherly feeling so indispensably requisite for the restoration of our people. The Jews will, at that time, be invested with new vigor: [Zechariah 12:8] "And he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David;" that is to say, the weakest among the Jews shall be distinguished as a hero, and be equal in courage to David. "And the house of David shall be godly as a messenger of the Lord before them." The Messiah himself will act as a messenger of the Lord, and in his own person will lead his subjects to battle against the hostile nations. Now the prophet proceeds by saying, Ibid. chapter 12:9-10, "And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all nations that come against Jerusalem. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications, and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced," etc.

The prophet having, in this manner, alluded to the great superiority of the Jews in the latter days, says now, that they will look to him in humility and contrition, on account of those who have been pierced and killed in war. The Jews will be so assured of the divine assistance in their restoration, that they will feel afflicted on account of those who shall become the first victims of their warfare with the Gentiles. Thus Joshua and the Israelites were afflicted with first beaten by the inhabitants of Ai. That leader of the Israelites then exclaimed, (Joshua 7:7), "Wherefore hast thou caused this people to pass over the Jordan," etc. And again (verse 8), "O Lord, what shall I say, after Israel have turned their backs before their enemies?" In the same manner, the people shall, in the days of the Messiah, look up in contrition to God, and import pardon on account of their having pierced (i.e. destroyed) the innocent. The term רָאָה is equal to the term עַל־בְּיַד־וְיָ on account of, or because, and does not mean "whom," as it has been generally rendered. In Ezekiel 36:27, we have רָאָה in the same sense, "And I shall do it on account of your walking (or because ye shall walk) in my statutes." The interest in the life of a fellow-man will be deeply felt during the latter 30 days that the Jews shall mourn for any man slain in the battle, as one is who mourns for the loss of an only son, and they shall be in bitter grief for him, as if it were for a first-born child. The comparison, with the loss of a first-born son, gives, in a few words, a picture of the intensity of grief. The subsequent comparison with the mourning of Hadadrimmon, we cannot further explain, there being no mention on record of the cause and

circumstances of that mourning. The prophet then shows how each family in Israel will partake in the affliction caused by the report of the fallen in war; and as it is a well-known fact, that the mournful tidings vibrate more keenly in the hearts of feeling women, than in the hearts of interested men, the prophet draws a distinguishing line between the mourning of the two sexes; and, speaking of the high families of Israel, he says, "And the land shall mourn, each family separately, the family of the house of David separately, their wives separately," etc. The description given here of the belligerent parties, and of the result of their actions near and at Jerusalem, evidently relates to a time not yet recorded in the pages of history. The Christians have therefore no basis, on which to rest their religious theory of the death of Jesus. Were there only a shadow of truth in their pretension, that the grief predicted by the prophet was to emanate from the mode in which Jesus met with his end on the cross, the prophecy ought to be worded, "And they will mourn for me, and be in bitterness for me." The fallacy of the assertions of the Christians, with regard to this prophecy, is not only to be proved from this detached part, but is also to be considered from what we demonstrated in the preceding parts. See, for example, chapter 10, where we have treated on the inconsistency of considering Jesus as the Messiah, and of the absolute impossibility of acknowledging him as the Godhead.

Chapter 37: Prophecy that Jesus would be smitten and his flock scattered (Zechariah 13:7)

Zechariah 13:7, "Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man who is my fellow, saith the Lord of Hosts; smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered, and I will turn my hand against the little ones."

According to the opinion of the Christians, the prophet meant Jesus by the "man who is my fellow," and the disciples of Jesus by the expression, "smite the shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered." This assertion rests on what we read in Mark 14:27.

Refutation:—The explanation given by the Christians to the above passage, is devoid of truth. the context to which the above verse belongs, relates exclusively to the downfall of the Kings of Palestine and to the dispersion of Israel. Simultaneously with that event the destruction of idolaters was to take place, and the righteous alone were to be saved from utter annihilation. The command given to the sword to "smite the shepherd who is my fellow," merely signifies that those Kings shall be punished who oppress the Jews, and who, in their delusion, believe they are doing a godly work in persecuting a religious people, and, in their inordinate conceit, imagine that they are the vicars and associates of the Almighty, whereas in the

minds of those men the serpent of temptation whispers, as it did to our first parents, "And ye shall be like unto God, knowing good and evil."

This conceit we have met with among the rulers in Asia and Africa, where enlightenment has made less rapid strides than in Europe; and on that account humiliation is most needful to the uninstructed in order to teach them to know the littleness of pride and the superiority of meekness. "Smite the Shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered." This passage indicates that the rulers of the Gentiles, who boast of their iniquitous government, shall be overthrown; and, from their fall, the deliverance of Israel will arise. there are many shepherds that must be struck prior to Israel's entire deliverance; for, unlike the ancient captivity in Egypt, the Jews are now scattered throughout numerous states and kingdoms. The return of our people to the inheritance of their fathers will, therefore, not take place in one collected body, but in numerous detached hosts. The term *פְּנֵי פָּנָי* of the above passage occurs also in the form of a noun in Isaiah 11:12, "and he shall gather the dispersed (*פְּנֵי צֹרֵת*) of Judah." "And I will turn my hand against the little ones." This passage likewise alludes to the subdued and powerless princes who shall be visited with humiliation according to their demerits. The Almighty will lend his help to those who have been the victims of malice. The inhabitants of the earth shall be awfully roused from their delusion, obeying the call of Isaiah, who says (chapter 34:1-2), "come near, ye nations, and listen, for the Lord will execute judgment on the cruel persecutors of his people."

Chapter 38: Widespread acceptance of Christianity foretold (Malachi 1:11)

Malachi 1:11, "For from the rising of the sun to the going down of the same, my name is great among the Gentiles; and in every place incense is offered up unto my name, and a pure offering, saith the Lord of Hosts." The Christians maintain that this prophecy bears upon their faith, which has been so extensively diffused in the world.

Refutation:—We do not discover in these words of Malachi any allusion to the faith of Christianity, which had no existence at the era of the prophet. We know well that Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, were contemporaneous, and lived about three hundred years anterior to Jesus. At the time of the last prophet, the Gentiles were worshipers of the heavenly constellations, and of idols representing those constellations. It was not, however, the intention of Malachi to expatiate on the abominations of Idolatry, but he merely delivered a reproof to the sinners of Israel who offered up loathsome sacrifices, and thereby profaned the name of the Almighty. Hence he says (chapter 1:12), "But ye are profaning it by saying, The table of the Lord is polluted, and the fruit thereof, even the meat, is contemptible." Subsequently the prophet reproaches the

people, and says, (chapter 1:13) "And ye bring an offering which has been stolen, and the lame and the sick." Whoever reads with attention to the lesson of the prophet, will find that he rebukes the Israelites for their having acted worse in their sacrifices to God, than the Gentiles toward their idols. In this reproof he accords with Ezekiel 5:7, "And ye have not dealt in the fashion of the Gentiles that are around you." While the Israelites neglected to imitate what was laudable in the worship of the Gentiles, they blindly followed their reprehensible practices, and, therefore, Ezekiel blames his people by saying (chapter 11:12), "In my statutes ye have not walked, and after my judgments ye have not acted, but ye have acted after the customs of the Gentiles that are around you." "And in every place incense is offered up unto my name." Hereby a comparison is made between the sordidness in the sacrifices of the Israelites and the greater liberality of the idolaters in their offerings to their false gods. For if the latter had been asked to whom they paid those tokens of reverence, they would have answered, to a divine power that governs the destinies of mankind, and, therefore, they were filled with awe and devotion, in spite of all their errors. But although those Gentiles had not a pure and an elevated idea of the Supreme Being, they were able to act agreeably to his revealed will; and, therefore, the prophet was justified in declaring in the name of the Lord, "For my name is great among the Gentiles." But since a worship cannot be approved in which a creature is put on an equality with the creator, the Gentiles would only find favor by acquiescing in the sublime belief of an omnipresent and omnipotent Deity; for such a belief alone affords real gratification to the reasoning mind and to the wishful heart. Hence Malachi 3:4, goes on to say, "And the sacrifices of Judah and Jerusalem shall be pleasant unto the Lord as in the days of old, and in former years." The means of finding favor in the eyes of the Almighty will only then increase when religious obstacles shall be removed. The favor of the Lord is therefore contingent on the purity of His worshipper, consequently Malachi declares (chapter 3:3), "And he shall sit as a refiner and as a purifier of silver; and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness." It is natural, that the sons of Levi and the priests should be prominently noticed in this prophecy, for those spiritual guides of the people were the very men who were designated "as the despisers of my name." Those who lead the way to sin must also by their example naturally be the first to meet with punishment. The verse which heads this chapter has a beautiful parallel in Psalm 113:3, "From the rising of the sun to the going down of the same, the name of the Lord is praised. The Lord is high above all nations." It could not be said, that David included all contemporaneous Gentile nations in the adoration of the God of Israel; and that he considered all the heathen to be believers in the same Deity. For he condemns the practices in the worship of the heathen in the very same book, saying (Psalm 115:4-9), "Their idols are of gold and of silver, the works of the hands of man; they have mouths and speak not, they have

eyes and see not, they have ears and hear not, they have noses and smell not, they have hands and feel not, feet and walk not, they speak not with their throats. Like unto them are those that make them, yea, all those that trust in them. Let Israel trust in the Lord, he is their shield and their help." Nearly the same terms are used in Psalm 135:15-18. We see, then, that the Gentiles, with all their errors, wished to adore a First Cause of all existence; yet the Psalmist, as well as the prophet spoken of above, deemed the faith and the observance of Israel as those strongholds by which the mind of man obtains true eminence and consolation; consequently there is not the slightest motive to forsake the path which our religion points out to its followers, and to adopt a faith so manifestly at variance with our ancient law.

Chapter 39: John the Baptist the new Elijah who proceeds the Messiah (Malachi 3:23-24)

Malachi, at the end of the book (chapter 3:23, or 4:5 in the Christian bible), saith, "Behold, I will send you the prophet Elijah before the coming of the great and awful day."

It has been asserted by Christian interpreters of this passage, that we Jews vainly expect the fulfillment of this prediction, because it has already been realized in the person of John the Baptist, who in spirit was equal to Elijah; it being said in Matthew 11:10, that Jesus declared that John was the Elijah predicted by Malachi. They particularly cite chapter 17 of Matthew, where Jesus is made to affirm (verses 12 and 13) "But I say unto you that Elijah is come already, and they know him not, but have done to him whatever they listed." Thus his disciples were led to believe that Elijah and John were identical in the above prophecy.

Refutation:—How can they deny the personal identity of the Prophet, mentioned in chapter 3:23? Who would venture to affirm that any other person is signified than the real Prophet Elijah, a truth equally manifest in the following passages: 1 Kings 18:21, "And Elijah drew near." —2 Chronicles 21:12, "And a writing of Elijah the prophet reached him." If the prophecy under consideration had had reference to an indefinite individual, it would have been communicated in such terms as the following, "Behold, I shall send a man like the prophet Elijah." Besides, he might have said, in terms which could not have failed to produce conviction, "Behold, I shall send you John." What necessity to have called him Elijah? Our argument gains in strength by the very statements contained in the gospel of John 1:21, "And they asked him [John], what then, art thou Elias to [Elijah], and he said, I am not." — "Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No." Comparing this passage with an assertion made in Matthew, we find a most glaring contradiction in the two Gospels. See Matthew 17:10-13, "And his disciples asked

him [Jesus], saying, Why then say the Scribes, that Elias [Elijah], must first come? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias [Elijah] shall first come and restore all things. But I say unto you that Elias [Elijah], is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed; likewise shall also the Son of Man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood that he spake to them of John the Baptist." It is utterly unnecessary to illustrate any further similar expressions bearing so visibly the stamp of human invention; and we are fully prepared to estimate the value of the interpretation given to this discrepancy by the Christian commentators, who maintain that John declined the title of "Prophet Elijah" out of pure humility. Humility will not allow us to utter an intentional untruth in order to establish our superiority. Faithful prophets have openly avowed their missions and the object of their appearance before the world. We dismiss, therefore, the claim of the Christian interpretation as totally unsatisfactory and unfounded.

Chapter 40: David spoke of Jesus sitting at the right hand of God (Psalms 110:1)

Psalm 110:1, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right side, until I make thine enemies thy footstool."

I heard once a Christian scholar plead that this passage can only have reference to Jesus, who was the combination of divinity and humanity; for of whom else could David have spoken as "my Lord" sitting at the right hand of the Almighty?

Refutation:—To this I made the following reply: — We attribute to David the composition of the 137th Psalm, commencing, "On the rivers of Babylon we sat and wept," a Psalm obviously treating of the Babylonian captivity, which took place about four centuries after the death of David. An allusion to so distant a period could only have been made by holy and an inspired writer.

There are also many passages in the book of Psalms which relate to the poet himself, as, for instance, Psalm 2:7, "I will declare it as a law. The Lord spoke unto me, Thou art my son, today I have begotten thee." In the same light must be considered many other subsequent Psalms. There are Psalms of another character, the object of which is to describe the period of the Jewish exile; to this class belongs the above-mentioned Psalm 137. Of the like prophetic character is Psalm 79:1 commencing, "O God, the heathen have come into thine inheritance, they have defiled thy holy temple." In a similar sense we take Psalm 74:1, "Wherefore, O God, hast thou forever forsaken us?" All such Psalms were composed for the captives of Israel through inspiration. We find other Psalms which have a still more remote bearing, and take within their range the gathering of the captives, and the days of the Messiah. See, for instance Psalm 96:1, commencing, "Sing unto the Lord

a new song," etc. This and other Psalms were dictated by holy inspiration, and originated most likely from some occurrence which urged the mind of the poet to enlarge upon the future restoration of Israel. Sometimes the cause of the production of such Psalms is recorded and pointed out by expressions more less definite. See, for instance, Psalm 20:2 [20:1], "The Lord shall answer thee on the day of trouble," in which David spoke first of his own sorrow, and then passed over to those awaiting the children of Israel while engaged in hazardous warfare. In the same category stands the Psalm, "God said unto my Lord (master), Sit thou at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool." Firstly, David speaks concerning himself, perhaps taking occasion to treat on the subject when his men had sworn "that he should no longer go with them to battle," on account of the danger to which he had so repeatedly exposed his life in conflict with the Philistines. See 2 Samuel 21:17, "Then the men of David swore into him saying, Thou shall no longer go out with us to battle, that thou quench not the light of Israel." The Psalm in question seems to have emanated from the impression made on the poet, while his men were anxious to prevent him from exposing his life any more in battle, and speaking, as it were, in their name, he makes them utter an appeal to himself in the following words, "God saith to my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand until I make thy enemies thy footstool." Now, whether David was or was not the author of this appeal, we must allow that in any case this emphatic exhortation was well calculated to work a powerful effect on the mind of a man so pious as King David. Being thus assured of the protection of God, as confirmed by the words, "The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength from Zion," which is, that "He will send thee help from his sanctuary, He will support thee from Zion," as that holy city was the distinguished locality which "the Lord chose for his abode," the words which follow, "Thy people shall be willing on the day of thy power," mean, Thy subjects, O King, will freely offer their lives to spare thine, while thou keepest away from danger. The passage, "Thou art my priest for ever according to the word concerning Melchizedek," means, Thou shalt, during all thy life, be unto me like Melchizedek, king of Jerusalem, who was denominated king and priest of the most high God. See Genesis 14:18, "And Melchizedek, king of Salem, caused bread and wine to be brought out, and he was a priest of the most high God." That David's sacred compositions rendered him worthy to be adorned with a title of priest appears evident enough from Scripture, as is exemplified in the second book of Samuel, where we read that David built an altar, offered up burnt offerings and peace offerings, which, accompanied by prayer and entreaty, "were accepted by the Lord, and the plague was stayed in Israel." The words עַל־כִּבְרֹתַי in the passage in the Psalm in question, mean "according to." We find עַל in the same sense in Job 10:7, "according to thy knowledge." The letter כ in כִּבְרֹתַי is paragogic as the כ in כִּבְרֹתַי (Lamentations 1:1). We must mention here, by way of digression, a misinterpretation given to the passage, "And

Melchizedek brought out wine and bread." The Christians believe that the bread and wine were offered as articles of sacrifice, but plain sense compels us to believe that the presentation of these things was merely for the entertainment of his guests. The 10th part given by Abraham to Melchizedek qualify the latter to be denominated priest of the most high God. Hence we see that the Psalmist meant none but himself, in the composition we have been treating of, while, on the other hand, he alluded to the future condition of the dispersed people, when in his inspiration he proclaimed (Psalm 96:1), "Sing ye unto the Lord a new song, let the whole Earth sing unto the Lord." Thus he says also in the subsequent Psalm, [Psalm 97:1] "The Lord reigneth; let the earth be glad, many isles shall rejoice." Those songs, as we said above, allude to the still unfulfilled ingathering of Israel. It appears to be a most unjustifiable assertion of the Christian expounder of the Psalms to maintain that the phrase, "To sit at the right hand of God," applies to an actual son of God, for the bible contains numerous proofs that the metaphor, "the right hand of God," solely signifies "Omnipotence of the Deity." What other interpretation could be assigned to the following sentences (from Psalm 118:16), "The right hand of the Lord is exalted, the right hand of the Lord worketh mighty things." Exodus 15:6, "Thy right hand, O Lord, is glorified in strength; thy right hand, O Lord, crusheth the enemy." Even when speaking of man, "the right hand" implies strength and exertion. See for instance Psalm 144:8, "And their hand is the right hand of falsehood." To take the word in a narrow and literal sense, must involve the expounder in the glaring fallacy of applying corporeality to one who he believes to be the Son of God. To a Jew, it would almost appear blasphemy literally to ascribe a right or a left hand to the Deity, a spiritual being to whom no attribute of corporeality can be absolutely ascribed. When the believer is urged to place himself on the right hand of the Lord, he can only understand that it is his duty to seek the protection of the Omnipotent. The more we read of Scripture, the more proofs we find that many parts of the bible have been misinterpreted in order to favor a certain religious dogma. The Psalm we are treating of has the expression, "The Lord hath sworn, he will not repent," which phrase has been considered as alluding to a new dispensation by which the sacrifices of flesh and blood should cease, and be substituted by oblations of bread and wine. But it has not been born in mind that the Deity never changes his views. "He is not a man that he should repent." Ordinances once given must be binding upon us, and upon all succeeding generations. We have already disposed of this subject in chapter 19 to which we refer the reader.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 41: Jesus 2nd advent foretold (Daniel 7:13)

Daniel 7:13, "I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of Man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him." The Christian expositors of Scripture ascribe the object of this prophecy to the advent of their Messiah, who, according to their view of this prophecy, was to be a superhuman being; otherwise how could he come with the clouds of heaven?

Refutation:—The prophet speaks here of a dream, in which things are meant to be represented in their literal sense. If the dream exhibits preternatural visions, the interpretation does not require a preternatural fulfillment. Daniel mentioned in the same chapter the destruction of the four kingdoms, and predicted that an enduring dominion will be granted to no other than the people holy to the Most High God. See *ibid.* verse 18, "And the holy ones of the Most High shall receive the dominion, and possess the kingdom for ever and ever, even for ever and ever." Again, verses 26, 27, "And the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion to consume and to destroy it unto the end. And the kingdom and the dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all kingdoms shall serve and obey him."

The clouds of heaven mentioned in the quotation at the head of this chapter, bring to mind the heavenly rule, which ordains changes on high, in the region which lies beyond the reach and influence of man. He that raises clouds, and makes them descend again to fructify the soil, must be acknowledged as the same supreme agent, and disposer of the fate of man. The idea is familiar to other prophets also. See for example Jeremiah 14:22, "Are there among the vanities of the heathen any that send down rain, and do the heavens yield them abundant showers?" "Is it not thou who art our God, and surely we will hope in thee; for thou doest all these things." The fleet clouds are often used as symbols of the swiftness with which God carries out His decrees. See Isaiah 19:1, "Behold, the Lord riding on a light cloud, and He is come to Egypt." Jeremiah 4:13, "Behold, like unto a cloud he rises up; like a whirlwind are His chariots." Isaiah 60:8, "Who are those that are flying like a cloud, and like doves to their windows?"

The superhuman powers developed in the divine dispensations are pointed out by Daniel 2:34, "Thou sawest that a stone was cut out, but not by any hands, which smote the image on his feet." In a like manner he mentions in the same chapter the aid that will be afforded by God (verse 44), "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed, and the kingdom shall not be left to other

people," etc. Thus the last kingdom on earth will be exalted beyond the others, by enjoying the special protection of heaven, and divine help shall descend upon the empire of the chosen ones, "as rain descends upon the earth blessed by the Lord."

Christians argue that the government spoken of by Daniel must belong to a Divine Being, because we read, "His dominion shall be an everlasting dominion." But we take those words in the sense that the kingdom shall be a perpetual and an inalienable inheritance, descending from father to son without interruption. Hence Daniel says, "And his kingdom shall not pass away." And again in chapter 7:27, "And all rulers shall serve and obey Him." The last-mentioned prediction is most decidedly not realized in the person of Jesus, for the Jews, the Mahomedans, and many other nations are not subject to the dominion of Jesus.

Christians may perhaps plead and say that the expression "all rulers," refers to a great number merely, and is applied here as in Genesis 24:10, "And he had in his hand all the goods of his master." But the connecting words must ever be our guide in cases of doubtful interpretation. Hence the word all, here and in any other similar case, cannot be taken in a limited sense; for the prophet Daniel says, (7:27) "And the kingdom, and the dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom which is under all the heavens shall be given to him." More-over, he expressly states in chapter 2:44, "I shall break in pieces and consume all those kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever." The same prediction we find in Isaiah 60:12, "For the nation and the kingdom which shall not serve thee shall perish; yea, those nations shall be utterly destroyed." The above-mentioned quotation, page 196 ante, "And the saints of the Most High shall obtain the kingdom," has sole reference to the children of Israel. A few citations from Scripture will show that the title saints, or holy ones, is frequently given to Israel. Exodus 22:30 (verse 31 in the English bible), "And ye shall be unto me a holy people." Deuteronomy 7:6, "For thou art a holy people unto the Lord thy God, the Lord thy God has chosen thee to be unto Him a nation distinct from all the nations on the face of the earth." Isaiah 62:12, "The holy people, the redeemed ones of the Lord." Daniel 7:21-22, "And I beheld the same horn made war with the saints and prevailed against them, until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High, and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom." And again, verse 25, "And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws, and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time." *Ibid.* 8:24, "And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power shall he be mighty, and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper and act, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people." And *ibid.* 12:7, "It shall be for a time, times, and a half, and

when he shall have accomplished the scattering the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished."

As Israel is called in Scripture the holy people of the Lord, so on the other hand is the Almighty represented as the Holy One of Israel. See Isaiah 12:6, "For great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of thee." Ibid. 37:23, "And thou hast lifted up thine eyes against the Holy One of Israel." Ibid. 41:14, "I have helped thee, saith the Lord, and the redeemer, the Holy One of Israel." Jeremiah 50:29, "For he rebelled against the Lord, against the Holy One of Israel."

The appellation, in Daniel, Most High, which the Christians have endeavored to appropriate to Jesus, is attributable to Israel, as will be seen on examining other parts of the Scriptures. See Deuteronomy 26:19, "And to make thee most high above all the nations which He hath made for His praise, for His name, and for His glory; and that thou mayest be a holy people unto the Lord thy God as He hath spoken." Ibid. 28:1, "And the Lord will make thee most high above all people of the earth."

From all these passages, it is evident that Israel could not yield to any other nation the title given to it in holy writ, and it must be acknowledged that the saints of the Most High God can only be of that people which is declared to be most high among the nations of the earth.

The prophecies, showing that the wicked Gentiles shall perish, and that the righteous shall unite with Israel, are sufficient evidences to prove, that also the present prophecy relates solely to the chosen people, for surely no expounder could reason away the lucid and simple announcement made by Isaiah 4:3, "And all that shall be left in Zion, and that remain in Jerusalem, shall be called holy." And again in 60:21, "And thy people, altogether righteous, shall inherit thy land for ever."

Thus we see that Daniel had no other object in view than to represent in his prophecy the final glory of Israel.

Chapter 42: Foretelling of Jesus being cut off childless after 70 weeks (Daniel 9:26)

Daniel 9:26, "And after threescore and two weeks shall an anointed man be cut off, and shall have nothing, and a noble people cometh that shall destroy the city and the sanctuary, and its end shall be in a flood, and until the end war is ordained to devastate." It is asserted by Christians that this verse reveals the fate of Jesus, who is to be cut off childless.

Refutation – In order to see how untenable is the position of the interpreters who rest their faith on such grounds, we must follow again the only just rule that can be adopted, and explain the verse from its context. We find in the same chapter (verse 24), "Seventy weeks are determined upon

thy people, and upon the holy city, to make an end of sins, and to make a reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring to everlasting righteousness, and to seal up visions and prophets, and to anoint the Holy of Holies." The seventy weeks are evidently a given period of time elapsing from the destruction of the first to the destruction of the second temple. See Jeremiah 29:10, "For thus saith the Lord, that after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon, I will visit you, and perform my good word towards you, in causing you to return to this place." And Lamentations 4:22, "The punishment of thine iniquity is completed, O daughter of Zion, He will not again lead thee into captivity."

According to the vision of Daniel mentioned in chapter 7 of his book (the seventh and following verses), he saw that the fourth animal (including Rome) would persecute Israel for a great length of time; and he meditated on the visions which were not clear to him, because he had not received a special revelation concerning the latter captivity of the Jews. Hence he says, at the conclusion of the seventh chapter, verse 28, "As for me, Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me, but I kept the matter in my heart." The same prophet had similar doubts regarding his visions when he heard the announcement (spoken of in chapter 8) of the cessation of the continual sacrifice, and of the destruction of the sanctuary, and of the overthrow of the people (see chapter 8:13-26). He then thought that the predicted length of Israel's captivity related to that state into which his people then were precipitated; he therefore was told, "Conceal this vision, for it shall be for many days." This communication the prophet found at variance with the one made to Jeremiah, that the captivity would last for seventy years only. We have to explain on this occasion the meaning of "the evening and the morning," mentioned in the original Hebrew of chapter 8:14.* This expression is illustrated in Zechariah 14:7, "And in the eventide there shall be light." The prophet Daniel perceived in this that the darkness of Israel's troubles would be dispelled by the light of Salvation. See, in addition to this Jeremiah 30:7, "And it is a time of trouble for Jacob, and he shall be saved from it." The reverse state of destruction is depicted by gloom and darkness. See Amos 8:9, "And I shall darken the earth on a day of light."

Chapter 8 verses 13, 14 of Daniel, amply show that the prophet labored originally under the opinion that the intended protraction of the captivity was owing to the iniquity of the people, and that they would pine in the state of banishment for two thousand three hundred days (signifying years); therefore he prayed to God to remove His wrath and anger. Neither did the angel of the Lord acquaint him of the actual termination of the last captivity. Daniel was only given to understand, that the cessation of prophecy would extend to the whole length of time necessary for the expiation of the sins of his people, for then would be fulfilled the prediction mentioned at the close of Lamentations 4:22, "Thy iniquity, O daughter of Zion, is ended; He shall no more cause thee to be led into captivity." Regarding the last exile of Israel, the prophet

Ezekiel has recorded similar expressions in his book (chapter 22:15, "And I will scatter thee among the heathen, and disperse thee in the countries, and will consume thy filthiness out of thee." The complete restoration, which we expect during the latter days, will be crowned with "everlasting righteousness" (see Daniel 9:24). This is confirmed by the agreement of many prophecies. See Isaiah 51:6, "And my salvation shall be for ever, and my righteousness shall not be abolished." Jeremiah 23:5, "And I will raise up unto David a righteous scion, and a king shall reign and prosper, and he shall do justice and righteousness in the earth," Isaiah 11:4, 5, "And he shall judge the poor with righteousness, and righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins." And at that time all Israel will be designated by the term righteous. See Isaiah 60:21, "And thy people will altogether be righteous." Again, *ibid*, chapter 61:3, "And men shall call them oaks of righteousness." The Psalmist likewise affords a testimony, since we find in Psalm 72:7, "In his days the righteous man shall flourish, Jerusalem will then be called, the abode of righteousness, the holy mount." We shall then say, in the words of Jeremiah (chapter 23:6), "The Lord our righteousness." The Messiah himself, according to the same prophet (chapter 23:6), will assume the title, "The Lord our righteousness," as we have already shown in the Chapter 19 of this work.

The words of Daniel (chapter 9:24) may be taken in the following sense: — "And vision [prophecy] shall be sealed up," that is to say, it will be finally determined and confirmed, for we find a repetition of the same words with the same signification in Job 33:16, "And he sealed up the chastisement." It cannot, therefore, be pretended that prophecy will then discontinue altogether, for we read in Joel 3:1, "And it will come to pass afterwards that I shall pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophecy." The epoch of the restoration will thus completely restore the forfeited boon of Prophecy.

We return now to the explanation of the conclusion of verse 24, in Daniel 9. "And to anoint the Holy of Holies," which means that at the restoration of Israel, the Holy of Holies, or the Temple, will receive its new consecration after having lain desolate during the whole period of the captivity. An extensive description of that solemnity is to be found in the prophecy of Ezekiel, chapter 43.

The seventy weeks spoken of in Daniel 9, are enigmatic terms, conveying the various epochs of Israel's fate during their second occupation of the Holy Land and their subsequent exile. The first epoch, designated in chapter 9, verse 25, expressed by seven weeks, is evidently in allusion to Cyrus; for it is said there, "Know and understand that from the giving forth of the word to restore and rebuild Jerusalem, until the anointed prince there shall be seven weeks." Now, we know well from the prophecy in Isaiah 45:1, that Cyrus was called the anointed king, for we find there, "Thus saith the Lord to his anointed king"

(to Cyrus), etc.; and in the same chapter the Lord announces, "he shall build my city and send back my captives." The termination of sixty-two weeks is remarkable for the cessation "of an anointed king," that is to say, Israel is according to that prophecy to be bereft of his last ruler. "And there is none for him, there is no anointed ruler for the people of Israel." The cessation of a ruler over Israel is simultaneous with the fall of the Temple, and, consequently, alluded to the conquest by Titus, when Israel ceased to exist as a nation, and was deprived of its Temple, its ruler, and its country. If the Christians take an impartial view of this chapter of Daniel, they cannot possibly imagine that it alludes to Jesus, who suffered on the cross nearly half a century before the exile of Israel.

The contradictory remarks made by Christian expositors on this chapter, afford ample proof of the scanty notions they have of its real signification. Scientific readers who are anxious to obtain a view of all the contradictions which beset the path of the Christian expounders of Daniel, will find an interesting account given in Abarbanel's commentary on the book of Daniel, which bears the title *Magne Hayeschungah* (the Fountains of Salvation).

With this chapter, we shall conclude the elucidation of Scriptural passages cited by Christians in support of their faith.

* It is singularly remarkable that these words, upon which the prophet laid peculiar stress (see *ibid.*, verse 26), are omitted in the English version.

Chapter 43: The matter of the Christian Apocryphal books briefly dealt with

Some small portion of Christians have reproached the Jews with the disbelief in the Apocryphal books; but such persons have been confuted by scholars of their own creed. The works comprised under the collective title "Apocrypha," were composed at a late period after the dispersion of Israel, when prophecy was totally extinct, and when inspiration no longer elevated the compositions of religious writers. The Apocrypha has, therefore, no claim on our religious reverence. Some of those books may have an historical foundation, others are based on fiction and mere invention; and the whole of the Apocrypha was composed in the Greek language, which language does not bear the stamp of authority in the mind of the Jew; we may therefore dismiss this subject without entering into further detail.

Chapter 44: Messiah brings one faith & one creed - Judaism (Isaiah 45:23, Zephaniah 3:9)

I observed to some Christians, that after the advent of the Messiah, there will be but one faith and one religion throughout the world. See Isaiah 45:23, "I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall surely not be recalled, that before me every knee shall bend, and by me every tongue shall swear." Zephaniah 3:9, "For then shall I turn (restore) unto all the people a pure tongue, that they shall call upon the name of the Lord, and serve him with one accord." The Christians themselves must admit that there will take place a union of faith, since John acknowledges in his Gospel, chapter 10:16, that there will be "One shepherd and one flock." Now, since the doctrine of unity of faith is admitted on all sides, it is not necessary to argue which of the three principal creeds will prevail, whether the Jewish, the Christian, or the Mahomedan, for surely if one of those is to be adopted, the other two will of necessity fall. When we peruse the statements of the prophets, we must undoubtedly acknowledge that Israel's faith is intended to survive all others. See for instance, Isaiah 52:1, "Awake, awake, put on thy strength, O Zion, put on the garments of thy glory, for neither the uncircumcised nor the unclean shall ever enter again into thy gates." Scripture evidently designated the Christians by the name of uncircumcised, and the Mahomedans, in despite of their frequent ablutions, deserve, in many respects, the epithet unclean. These two sects are more especially pointed out in prophecy, because they, as the representatives of Edom and Ismael, have alternately held possession of Jerusalem since its destruction by Titus.

From the time of the coming redemption, the prophet declares that none of the uncircumcised and the unclean shall ever again enter the gates of the Holy city. In the same manner says the prophet Joel, in chapter 4:17 (3:17 in the English bible), "And Jerusalem shall be holy, and no stranger shall enter therein." Respecting the same two nations, says the prophet Isaiah (66:17), "They that sanctify themselves and purify themselves in the gardens behind one in the midst of them, who eat the flesh of swine and the abominations and the mice, they shall perish altogether, saith the Lord." Those persons who sanctify and purify themselves are obviously the Ishmaelites who defile themselves by the most licentious indulgences. The reflective form of the Hebrew verb, as used in this quotation, conveys the idea of pretension and false claim, and in such a position are those of whom the prophet says, they "sanctify and purify themselves." The expression, the eaters of swine's flesh and other abominations, has allusion to the Christians, and their creed will therefore perish during the wars of the latter times. Concerning the people of Israel, however, Isaiah says, chapter 66:20, "And they shall bring all your brethren from all the Gentiles as

an offering unto the Lord, on horses and chariots, and in litters, and upon mules and upon swift beasts, to my holy mount of Jerusalem, saith the Lord, as the children of Israel bring an offering in a holy vessel into the house of the Lord." The nations surviving the wars of the latter times shall show honor to the Israelites, and hasten to join the true service of the Lord; hence the prophet says (chapter 66:23), "And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to the other, and from one Sabbath to the other, all flesh shall come to bow down before me, saith the Lord." In the prophecy of Zechariah, we likewise find (chapter 14:16), "And it shall come to pass, that all who have been spared of all the Gentiles who come up against Jerusalem, shall come up from year to year to bow down before the King, the Lord of Hosts, and to celebrate the feast of Tabernacles." The prediction of a periodical visit to Jerusalem by all the Gentiles, for the observance of the festivals of the Lord, is an evident proof that they are to be united with the ancient nation of Israel. With this view the prophet Zechariah says (chapter 8:23), "Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, At that time ten men from all the tongues of the Gentiles shall take hold of the skirts of a man that is a Jew, saying, We will go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." The same prophet declares in another place (chapter 9:7), "And I shall remove his guilt of blood from his mouth, and his abomination from beneath his teeth, and also he shall be left unto our God." This proves that they will abstain from eating unlawful food, like those who are born Israelites. We have already dwelt on this point, and refer the reader to the Chapters 15 and 25 of this work. In order to prove the strength of our doctrine beyond any doubt, we have only to add the clear prediction of the same prophet (Zechariah 14:9), "And the Lord shall be king of the whole earth; on that day the Lord shall be one, and his name one." The Lord will no longer be adored under the restricted title of King of Israel, as he actually is described by Isaiah, who says (chapter 44:6), "Thus saith the Lord, the King of Israel and his redeemer, the Lord of Hosts, I am the first and I am the last, and besides me there is no other God." And again, chapter 45:15, "Surely thou art the God who art hidden, the God of Israel, and his Deliverer." In chapter 54:5, that prophet informs us of the extension of the name of the God of Israel, to that of the God acknowledged by all nations: he says, "For thy Maker is thy Husband, the Lord of Hosts is his name, and thy Redeemer is the Holy One of Israel, he shall be called the God of the whole earth." The one God, and his one and only law of Sinai, will be acknowledged by all the inhabitants of the earth; no principle of Duality or of Trinity will then prevail. "All nations thou hast made will then come, as the Psalmist exclaims (Psalm 86:9), "and bow down before Thee and honour Thy name." And as throughout the realms of the universe the Supreme King of heaven will be acknowledged, so throughout all the kingdoms of the earth will his anointed king, Messiah, be the only worldly ruler. We shall have another opportunity of treating on the last mentioned subject when discussing, in the second part of this work, the merits of the contents of the other chapters of the Gospel of John. We conclude

this chapter with the conviction that men of understanding and reading, attentively considering such passages as we have quoted, cannot any longer conscientiously refuse their assent to our belief of the future universal establishment of the Faith of Israel.

Chapter 45: Passages from TN”K quoted in the Christian Testament are not applicable

I have to set forth the following objection to the Christian religion. If our Christian brethren are sincerely anxious to separate truth from falsehood, they ought to examine the passages of the Old Testament quoted in the gospel, and ascertain whether they are really applicable or not. A brief survey of such topics shows that the quotations in the gospel can never be considered cogent or satisfactory. Whoever reads the statement made by the prophets must at once grant, that they never had it in contemplation to afford any clue or even a preference for the admission of a change or abjuration of the Faith of Israel. Besides this, the authors of the gospel have occasionally garbled and perverted the form as well as the sense of the original text, and have thus based their erroneous opinion on an unstable foundation. Even in matters relating to history, where the fact has no relation to prediction and fulfillment, they have resorted to misrepresentation, which does not argue in favor of the veracity of their faith, or of their sound knowledge of the Scriptures. We shall examine these discrepancies in the Second Part of this work, and will now only make a few cursory remarks on one or two points.

Matthew, in the first chapter, (verse 8) of his book, says, "And Joram begat Ozias." This is not to be found in the Old Testament. In 1 Chronicles 3:11, we read the following genealogy: "Joram his son, Ahaziah his son, Joash his son, Jotham his son." Azariah, father of Jotham, here mentioned, was Uzziah, mentioned elsewhere in our Scripture, consequently the three generations of Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah, are omitted in the Gospel of Matthew. The omission is not caused by any oversight, but must have been intentional, in order to reduce the generations to the like number as those from Abraham to David, and thus to make both series of genealogy appear to consist of fourteen generations. Nor is the enumeration of the third series of fourteen generations during the Babylonian captivity, and coming down to Jesus, anything but a mere invention, in order to lead to the opinion that the three genealogical divisions ending in Jesus, were ordained as a special manifestation from the Almighty. Equally unsound is the tale of Matthew that Jesus was brought forth by a Virgin, in order to fulfill the words of Isaiah 7:14, "Behold, the young woman [according to the vulgate a virgin] shall conceive and shall bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Emmanuel." What connection with the birth of Jesus has the address made by Isaiah to King Ahaz, in order to remove his fear of the two hostile kings then threatening Jerusalem? What comfort could it possibly have afforded

to Ahaz, and how could it have allayed his terror, if the prophet, in proof of his divine mission, had given him a sign which could not and was not to be realized for more than five centuries after the death of the king? A fair examination of the entire passage in Isaiah will be found in chapter 21 of this work. The same discordance between the word of Scripture and its application in the New Testament will be found in referring to the following passage of Matthew 2:14, 15, "And he [Joseph] arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt. And he was there until the death of Herod; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, "Out of Egypt have I called my son." The prophet alluded to in this portion of the gospel is Hosea, who in reality says (in chapter 11:1, "When Israel was a youth I loved him, and from Egypt I called my son." The fulfillment had not been delayed to the times of Jesus, but had taken place in the days of Moses when the Lord had told him (Exodus 4:22, 23) "And thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, thus saith the Lord, Israel is my first-born son;" and again, "Send away my son that he may serve me. What connection between Prophecy and the New Testament can be discovered in the following passage of St. Matthew? (chapter 2:16-18), "And Herod sent forth and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem from two years old and under. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, (chapter 31:15), saying, Rachel is weeping for her children, and would not be comforted because they are not." Whoever reads the complete passage delivered by Jeremiah, will soon perceive that he speaks of the captives, who, he says, *ibid* verse 16, "Shall return from the land of the enemy." And subsequently the prophet continues to say, (*ibid* verse 17), "And the children shall return to their boundary." It is thus quite evident, that Jeremiah is representing the lamentations of an afflicted mother, who alludes to the children who are living in captivity, and not those who have been massacred by a tyrant: the ten tribes being called by the name of Ephraim the descendants of Rachel; who was represented as a becoming emblem of maternal grief for her unhappy children. Moreover, if the prophet had intended to point out the affliction created by the massacre of the children in Bethlehem Judah, he would have selected Leah as the representative of the wounded spirit of a bereaved mother; for she and not Rachel was the female ancestor of the inhabitants of Bethlehem. Various other remarks on this passage have already been made in chapter 28 of this work.

In the same second chapter of Matthew, verse 23, we read, "And he came and dwelt in the city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a 'Nazarene.'" It is quite certain that the writings of our prophets afford not the slightest authority in support of this quotation.

In Matthew 5:43, Jesus is made to say, "Ye have heard that it hath been said, thou shalt love thy neighbor and hate thine enemy." Now we maintain that the additional

injunction of hating the enemy flowed from the inventive mind of the author of the Gospel, and that it is not to be found in any part of the Jewish law. What we find in our law concerning the treatment of our enemy, is conveyed in totally different terms. See Exodus 23:4-5, "If thou meet thine enemy's ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou seest the ass of him that hateth thee, lying under his burden and wouldst forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him." Again, see Leviticus 19:17, 18, "Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart, thou shalt in anywise rebuke thy neighbor, and not suffer sin upon him. Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself." The same precept is reproduced in Proverbs 25:21, "If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink."

In Matthew 23:35, Jesus reproaches the Jews for having slain Zacharias, son of Barachias, "between the temple and the altar." In this reproach an insufficient acquaintance with our Holy Books is shown, inasmuch as it was Zachariah, the son of Jehoiada, the priest, who was slain (see 2 Chronicles 24:22). Some Christian commentators endeavor to explain away this discrepancy, asserting that the father of Barachias had two names. But this is a clumsy subterfuge, for the priest Zechariah, the son of Jehoiada, lived in the days of Joash, king of Judah, while Zechariah, the son of Berachiah, prophesied during the reign of Darius; therefore several centuries intervened between the existence of the two men bearing the name Zechariah.

In Mark 2:25, Jesus is made to say to the Pharisees, "Have ye never read what David did when he had need, and was an hungered, he and they that were with him? How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar, the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful but for the priest, and gave also to them that were with him?" This author of the Gospel likewise evinces an inattentive perusal of our Scriptures, since David did not go to Abiathar, but he went to Ahimelech, the father of Abiathar. See 1 Samuel 21:2 [21:1], "And David came to Nob to Ahimelech the priest;" and ibid chapter 22:20, "And one of the sons of Ahimelech, the son of Ahitub, named Abiathar, escaped and ran after David." Nor did David come to Ahimelech with his followers, as the above quotation from Mark would lead one to suppose. For Ahimelech asked David (1 Samuel 21:2 [21:1], "Why art thou alone, and no man with thee?" in St. John 13:34, Jesus communicates to his disciples, "A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another." This commandment is decidedly not new. Moses laid it down in the words, [Leviticus 19:18] "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself."

In Acts 7:4, it is to be seen, "Then came he (Abraham) out of the land of the Chaldeans and dwelt in Haran, and from thence, when his father was dead, He [God] removed him unto the land wherein ye now dwell." This is erroneous,

for Abraham quitted Haran during his father's lifetime. And since Terah, the father of Abraham, died in Haran at the age of 205 years, he must have resided there for sixty years after the departure of Abraham. The following statement will prove this, according to the account given in Genesis:— Terah was seventy years old when he begat Abraham, and the latter, when seventy-five years old, quitted his father; and Terah having died at the age of 205, he must, therefore, have been still living for sixty years after his son's departure. The order in which the history of Terah and Abraham is given in Genesis 11 and 12 has most probably led to the inaccuracies we have pointed out.

In Paul's Epistle to the Romans 9:24-25, the Gentiles are declared to be on an equality with the Chosen People. "Even us whom he hath called not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles. As he says also in Hosea, 'I will call them my people which were not my people, and her beloved which was not beloved.'" Whoever peruses the first and second chapter of Hosea will find that Paul made use of the most tortuous means in order to show that the Gentiles are meant by that prophet. So long as the people of Israel, through sin, forfeited the favors of God, they were stigmatized by the designation "Loammi" (no more my people), and "Lo-ruchamah" (not received in mercy), but on returning to God, the Judgment was, according to the prophet, to be reversed, and they would bear the title "Ammi" (my people), and "Ruchamah" (received in mercy). The contents of Hosea's prophecy completely refute Paul's attempt to assimilate the Gentiles with the Jews.

In the same ninth chapter of Paul (verse 33) a quotation from Isaiah is inserted, "Behold I lay in Zion a stumbling-stone and rock of offence, and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed." This quotation is a mere fabrication of the author. In Isaiah 8:14, we find only, "And he shall be for a sanctuary, and for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both houses of Israel; for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem." In chapter 28:16 of the same prophet, we read "Therefore, thus saith the Lord God, Behold I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone of trial, a precious corner-stone, which shall be well founded, yea securely founded; he that believeth shall not hasten from it." Paul thus combines various distinct passages to make them serve his own views.

In chapter 10:11 of Paul's Epistle to the Romans and 1 Peter 2:6, an inaccurate version of the above is given, "He that believeth on him shall not be ashamed" (or confounded). Scripture thus mutilated can certainly not uphold the fabric of human faith. Again, Paul says in Romans 10:6-8, "Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above); or who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) But what saith it? The word is nigh thee; even in thy mouth and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach." The words separated by Paul from their context, allude to the Divine promise contained in Deuteronomy 30:3, "God will turn the

captivity of Israel and replace all evils with blessing," verse 2, "if thou wilt turn to the Lord with all thy heart and with all thy soul." Ibid 11, 12, "For this commandment or precept which I command thee this day is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven that thou shouldst say, Who shall go up for us to heaven and bring it unto us, that we may hear it and do it." The grace of the Almighty here points out to us the magnitude of the duty of repentance, and the ease of accomplishing it. Commonly the value of worldly advantages is estimated according to the difficulty of obtaining them. But the preciousness of repentance consists in the means which the Almighty has placed within our reach; and therefore the subject closes with the terms *ibid* verse 14, "but the thing is very nigh unto thee. It is in thy heart and in thy mouth that thou mayst do it."

In the Epistle to the Hebrews 10:5, Paul quotes the following words from our Scriptures:—"Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body thou hast prepared me." The true passage occurring in Psalm 40:7 [40:6], is, however, thus worded: "Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire, mine ears hast thou opened," etc. The Psalmist touched here only on the subject of obedience as agreeing with the announcement made by Moses previously to the delivery of the Decalogue. See Exodus 19:5, where it is said, "And it shall come to pass, if ye diligently hearken unto my commandments and keep my covenant, that ye shall be unto me a distinct people from among all nations, for mine is the earth." The matter is further developed by Jeremiah, who says in his book, chapter 7:22, 23, "For I spoke not unto your ancestors, and I commanded not unto them concerning the burnt offering and sacrifices; but this I commanded them, saying, Hearken unto my voice." Again, in 1 Samuel 15:22, obedience is enforced in preference to sacrifice, "Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold obedience is better than sacrifice, to attend unto Him is better than the fat of rams." We thus see that sacrifices were not ordained for their intrinsic value, but were intended to lead sinners into the temple, where they might contemplate on the mercy of God while performing the prescribed offering. Sacrifices consequently produced the same sanctifying effect on the mind, as healing medicines do on the body. We have here selected only a few Scriptural passages from those incorrectly cited in the New Testament, but will resume the subject more minutely in the Second Part of this work.

Many Christian commentators have lost their way, while attempting to reconcile those inconsistencies which we perceive in the New Testament, and they have found it necessary to assert, that it is not right to argue on those dubious matters. If that principle be true, it certainly would be better if the Jews were left unmolested by the assailants of their ancient religion, and if they were left free from the obtrusion of doctrines which interest neither faith nor reason.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 46: Divine chastisement of Gentile nations who persecute the Jews

There is a striking instance of the fulfillment of prophetic warnings exhibited in the chastisement inflicted on the Gentiles, who relentlessly persecuted the Jews. There has never yet been a ruler exercising tyranny over the Jewish people who escaped with impunity. For although the Almighty deems it proper to visit Israel's transgressions, He does not suffer mortal man to act arbitrarily and fiendishly, where he is employed as the instrument of Divine Providence. Thus Pharaoh, Sennacherib, Nebuchadnezzar, Haman, and other persecutors of the Jews, met with the retribution suited to their excesses, notwithstanding the calamities of exile falling upon the Israelites for their continuance in sin. They had not forfeited the title of God's people and His heritage, and He never disowned them so far as to destroy them totally; for the sole object of His corrections was to bring them back from their iniquitous conduct. And because He never rent asunder the tie of the covenant made with their fathers, He is in all parts of Scripture mentioned as their God. This is illustrated by the following quotation:— Leviticus 26:44, "And even this I will do, when they shall be in the land of their enemies, I will neither despise nor loathe them so as to consume them, and to break my covenant with them, for I am the Lord their God." In their own country they committed sins arising from their prosperity and affluence, their punishment was, therefore, adjusted to their evil ways. The loss of the "goodly land," and the degradation from an independent to a dependent state, and from riches to poverty, were the chastisements proportioned to their withdrawal from the ways of God. In this respect, they shared the fate of a king's minister who has fallen into disgrace with his sovereign; even after his estate has been confiscated, he still remains a subject of his master, and in lowering him the king merely exercises his royal prerogative. Should now a stranger undertake to cast further humiliation upon the fallen courtier, will not his master direct his displeasure and vengeance upon him who tramples on the fallen man? History has, indeed, amply shown that in the very same countries in which the Jew suffered persecution for his faith, the persecutors soon engaged in sanguinary conflicts among themselves under various pretexts. After the expulsion of the Jews from England, France, Spain, and Germany, unheard of cruelties ensued, the description of which excites the utmost horror in every breast, while, on the other hand, the countries in which the Jew was left unmolested, bore the most undeniable proofs of civilization, and obtained by providential retribution the enjoyment of prosperity. This state of quietude will ever remain uninterrupted wherever toleration prevails, although new sects may start up in defiance of newly established creeds. This opinion is

founded on our own experience as well as on the following Scriptural testimonies:— See Deuteronomy 7:15, "And the Lord shall remove from thee every sickness and all the evil diseases of the Egyptians; He shall not put them upon thee, but give them upon thine enemies." Ibid chapter 30:7, "And the Lord thy God shall put all these oaths upon thine enemies and upon thy haters who have persecuted thee." See also Isaiah 41:11, 12, "Behold all those who were incensed against thee shall be ashamed and confounded; they shall be as nothing, and they that strive with thee shall perish. Thou shalt seek them and not find them. Even them that contended with thee; they that war against thee, shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nought." Ibid chapter 47:5, 6, "Sit thou silent and get thee into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans; for thou shalt no more be called the Lady of Kingdoms. I was wroth with my people, I have polluted mine inheritance, and given them into thine hand. Thou didst shew them no mercy: upon the ancient thou hast very heavily laid the yoke." Ibid chapter 49:26, "And I will feed them that oppress thee with their own flesh, and they shall be drunken with their own blood as with sweet wine, and all flesh shall know that I the Lord am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the mighty one of Jacob."

See also Jeremiah 2:3, "Israel is holiness unto the Lord and the first fruits of his increase; all that devour him shall offend; evil shall come upon them, saith the Lord."

Ibid 30:16, "Therefore all they that devour thee shall be devoured; and all thy adversaries every one of them shall go into captivity, and they that spoil thee shall be a spoil, and all that prey upon thee, will I give for a prey." Joel 4:2 [3:2], "I will gather all nations, and bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for my people and for my heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and divided my land." The same prophet says, at the conclusion of his book, chapter 4:19 [3:19], "Egypt shall be a desolation, and Edom shall be a desolate wilderness for their violence against the children of Judah, because they have shed innocent blood in their land." Obadiah, in his prophecy (verse 10), says, "For the violence against thy brother Jacob, shame shall cover thee, and thou shalt be cut off for ever." See also the remaining part of this prophecy. Zephaniah 2:9, 10, "Therefore as I live, saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; surely Moab shall be as Sodom, and the children of Ammon as Gomorrah, even as the breeding of nettles, and salt pits, and a perpetual desolation; the residue of my people shall spoil them, and all the remnant of my people shall possess them. This they shall have for their pride, because they have reproached my people and magnified themselves." And at the conclusion of the book, the prophet says, (3:19), "Behold at that time I will undo all that afflict thee; and I will save her that halteth and gather her that was driven out, and I will set them as praise and fame in every land where they have been put to shame." Zechariah 1:15, "I am very sore displeased with the nations that are at ease; for I was but little displeased, and they helped forward the affliction. Ibid 2:12, 13 [2:8-9], "For thus saith the Lord of hosts, after the glory hath he sent me

unto the nations which have spoiled you; for he that toucheth you toucheth the apple of his eye. For, behold, I will turn my hand upon them, and they shall be a spoil unto their own servants, and ye shall know that the Lord of hosts hath sent me." See also Psalm 83:2 [83:1], commencing "O God, keep not thy silence." Chapters 25, 26, 35, and that portion of 36 to verse 16 of the book of Ezekiel, afford further elucidations on the subject.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 47 : Was Jesus crucified with his will or against his will?

The following argument may be raised against the Christians who oppose Judaism. They either believe that the Jews tormented and crucified Jesus with his will or against his will. If with his will, then the Jews had ample sanction for what they did, and could in that case only have merited the Divine approbation, acting as they then did in conformity with the ejaculation of David in Psalm 40:9 [40:8], "I have been desirous to perform Thy will;" and Psalm 143:10, "Teach me to perform Thy will." The Jews must also have followed the admonition of Ezra 10:11, "and now give ye thanks unto the Lord the God of your fathers, and execute his desire." In addition to this we must ask, that if Jesus was really willing to meet such a fate, what cause was there for complaint or affliction? And why did he pray in the manner narrated in Matthew 26:39, "And he [Jesus], went a little further and fell on his face and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible let this cup pass from me, nevertheless not as I will but as thou wilt." After Jesus had been fixed to the cross he gave evident proof of his non-identity with the Deity by exclaiming [Matthew 27:46], "My God! My God! Why hast thou forsaken me?" This argues that the will of God was different from that of Jesus, and that he bore no closer relation to the Creator than belongs to every other mortal.

We will now proceed to the other alternative and suppose that the crucifixion of Jesus was done against his will. In this case the question arises, How could he be designated a God while he was incapable of resisting the power of those who brought him to the cross, and how could he be held as the Savior of all mankind who could not save his own life?

The adoration paid to Jesus after his death recalls to our mind the passage in Ezekiel 28:9, "Wilt thou say before him that slayeth thee, I am God; but thou art a man and not a God in the hand that slayeth thee."

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 48: A challenge to the doctrine that Jesus' blood could save Christians from hell

We would submit to discussion the question whether the Christians have any foundation for the belief that Jesus wrought his beneficial works for the salvation of the souls of his believers, and through his sufferings and his blood, he saved the followers of his creed from everlasting perdition in hell? If that were the case, the Christians would be dispensed from doing good actions, and be irresponsible for evil deeds. A passage occurring in St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians (chapter 6:9) will moreover show that the fall of Jesus was only of advantage to the upright, but not to sinners. "Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God." Of this we find a detailed explanation in the subsequent verses. Now, if sinners devoid of merit cannot be saved, why should the righteous who have merits require any intercession in order to obtain the Divine favor? It would appear then that the death of Jesus serves neither for the salvation of the sinner, nor for the salvation of the righteous.

Should the Christians argue that the death of Jesus was intended only to rescue from hell the souls of those who were involved in the sin of Adam, then we would refer back to the pages wherein we have fully proved that the prophets and the pious could not reasonably, and according to Scriptural evidence, incur damnation on account of the fall of Adam.

Chapter 49: Myriad inconsistencies between Christian doctrines and the teachings of Jesus

An extraordinary degree of inconsistency presents itself in numerous points, when we compare the doctrine of the Christians with the teachings of Jesus and his Apostles.

In the first place, we find that Jesus does not, in any part of the New Testament, call himself "God," but continually calls himself "Man," or "the Son of Man." The title of Divinity attributed to Jesus is consequently conferred upon him without the sanction of that book, the authority of which can alone be of value to the Christians.

In the second place, we notice that Jesus expresses himself, in various places, that he did not come to abolish the law of Moses, but to uphold it. Thus we read in Matthew 5:17, 18, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill: for verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot, or one tittle, shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled." In a similar manner, we find in Luke 16:17, "And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one

tittle of the law to fail." Nevertheless, the Christians persist in believing that the Mosaic dispensation is no longer in force, but has been superseded by that of Jesus.

In the third place, we observe, from the words of Jesus, that he thought everlasting bliss depended on the obedience to the holy laws of Moses, for when asked by the rich man, what he was to do in order to earn beatitude in life everlasting, Jesus answered (Matthew 19:17-19, "If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. The rich man said unto him, which commandment? Jesus answered, Thou shalt do no murder; thou shalt not commit adultery; thou shalt not steal; thou shalt not bear false witness; honour thy father and thy mother; and thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." The Christian of our day adds, that the sole condition on which life eternal depends, is the belief in Jesus as the Savior of the soul. Jesus moreover taught the young man [Matthew 19:21], "If thou be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor." This precept we have never yet seen performed by any Christian.

In the fourth place, we do not anywhere find the Christian who submits to the humiliation enjoined by Jesus on his disciples, when he said (Luke 6:29) "And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also," etc.

In the fifth place, we have to point out that, while the Christians believe that Mary, after having given birth to Jesus, still remained a virgin, Jesus himself was not of that opinion; for, according to John 2:4, he said, "Woman, what have I to do with thee?"

In the sixth place, we find the Christians at variance, not only differing from the Mosaic, or rather Noachic prohibition of eating blood, but even from the injunction we read in Acts 15:20, "But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood." See also *ibid* 15:29 and 21:25.

Chapter 50: Doctrinal additions to the NT, in spite of their scripture condemning such

We would ask the Christians who take the New Testament as a substitute for the Mosaic law, how they could venture to add, or diminish from the doctrines set forth in that law, seeing that the most severe denunciations are pronounced against him, who would dare either to add to, or omit the doctrines contained therein.

As points of addition, we must consider – First, The dogma of the Trinity. The New Testament itself furnishes us only with proofs against the existence of a Trinity, as we have already shown in the tenth chapter of this book.

Secondly, We do not learn from the New Testament that Jesus called himself God, or that he arrogated to himself the unbounded power of the Almighty.

Thirdly, We have to ask those members of Christianity who worship images, how they could introduce a worship which runs counter to the stringent prohibitions of Jesus regarding this matter? For he prohibited his disciples from tasting the very flesh of animals sacrificed in honor of images. The defense attempted by those who bow to images is perfectly untenable. They allege that the images merely recall to mind the memory of holy men and women, and that they do not pay adoration to their inanimate representations. They, however, cannot deny that the form is polytheistic, and that, in their estimation, their bowing and prostration, and praying before those figures of saints, imparts a Divine character to those images.

Fourthly, The Christians, in visiting upon the Jews the death of Jesus, are acting against his expressed opinion; for, according to Luke 23:34, Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do."

The wide scope to cruelty which has been given by the assumption of the right of avenging the death of Jesus on the Jews, has been sadly demonstrated in the conduct of the worst of men, who have heaped upon the inoffensive false accusations and acts of violence. As to the Christians' omission of acts enjoined by Jesus, we will point out—

First, The non-adoption by Christians of the precept to sell their property and distribute among the poor the money thus realized: Matthew 19:21, and Luke 18:22. No Christian, according to our knowledge, ever acquiesces in this mode of doing charity.

Secondly, The Christians do not practice the following admonition, contained in Luke 6:35, "Love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, and hope for nothing again;" and Matthew 5:44, "Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them who despitefully use you and persecute you."

Thirdly, The Christians have, without authority, abolished the law, repeated in the New Testament, that they should abstain from eating blood and the flesh of the strangled, as we have shown in the preceding chapter, by citing Acts 15:29, and 21:25.

If Christians thus evade well-defined doctrines of the New Testament, they cannot cast any reproach on the Jew, who, from conscientious motives, refuses adherence to the new doctrines of the Christian religion.

Thus we have fairly established our objection to Christianity in the various arguments adduced in the preceding chapters, wherein we have refuted the attacks made by Christians upon the Jewish faith.

Let not the reader blame us for having occasionally made repetitions. Our desire has by no means been to swell the volume, but merely to render our arguments more clear and effective.

END OF THE FIRST PART

Part II – Review and Refutation of the Christian Testament’s Inconsistencies

INTRODUCTION

BEING A REFUTATION OF STATEMENTS CONTAINED IN THE NEW TESTAMENT. THE VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT USED BY THE AUTHOR WAS THAT MADE BY SIMON BUDNI, PUBLISHED IN 1572, WHOSE VERSION IS CONSIDERED THE MOST AUTHENTIC.

It is notorious that, in no part of the New Testament do we find that Jesus intended to pass as the author of a New Law, but, on the contrary, that he admitted the perpetual duration of the Mosaic Law, as we have shown in the 19th, 20th, 24th, 29th, and 30th chapters of the FIRST PART of this work. Besides, it is ascertained that the New Testament was composed many years after Jesus. It has been averred even by Jerome, in his Latin version of the New Testament, that Mark and Luke wrote merely from hearsay. Jerome seems to have thereby indirectly acknowledged the Apocryphal character of those compositions, and admitted the true origin of the incongruities and contradictions which occur in various parts of those books. We must also direct the attention of the reader to the incorrect manner in which portions of our prophets are quoted and explained therein. Very frequently the words of our Scripture are there actually changed and perverted from their true signification. In fact, after a careful perusal of the Christian Canon of faith, we have been impressed with the conviction that the authors of the New Testament have overlooked, either intentionally or unintentionally, the real meaning and bearing of our original Sacred writings.

Chapter 1: The genealogies of Jesus according to Matthew and Luke compared

I was once asked by a Christian scholar, "Why do you Jews refuse to believe that Jesus Christ was the Messiah, evidence concerning him having been given by the true prophets, in whose words you also believe?"

And this is the answer which I gave him: How is it possible for us to believe that he was the Messiah, as we do not see any actual proof of his Messiahship throughout the prophetic writings. As for the passages which the authors of the Gospel adduce from the words of the prophets, to demonstrate that Jesus the Nazarene was the Messiah, they advance nothing relating to him, as will be shown in the second part of this work, in which we shall, in regular succession, point out the fallacies set forth in the Gospel. On the other hand, we shall see many incontrovertible proofs in support of our conviction that

Jesus was by no means the Messiah. A few of these arguments may be here introduced,

He was not the Messiah is evident:--

1st, from his pedigree;

2ndly, from his acts;

3rdly, from the period in which he lived; and

4thly, from the fact that, during his existence, the promises were not fulfilled which are to be realized on the advent of the expected Messiah, whereas the fulfillment of the conditions alone can warrant a belief in the identity of the Messiah.

1st. As to the pedigree of Jesus, he was not a descendant of David, being merely affiliated to him through Joseph, as is testified in the Gospel. For in Matthew, chapter 1, it is written, that Jesus was born of Mary during her virginity, and that Joseph knew her not until she had given birth to Jesus. According to this statement, the pedigree of Joseph can be of no avail to Jesus, and at the same time it is quite evident that the ancestry of Mary was unknown to the authors of the Gospel. But even the relationship of Joseph to David is wanting in proof, there being a discrepancy between Matthew and Luke in their account of his pedigree, which appears clearly, when we compare the Gospel of Matthew, chapter 1, with that of Luke, at the end of chapter 3. Here we see conflicting testimonies; and where that is the case no belief can be attached to either statement. The prophets, on the contrary, predicted to us that the expected Messiah should be no other than a descendant of David.

2ndly. As to the works of Jesus, we find that He says of himself, Matthew 10:34, "Think not that I am come to make peace on earth; I came not to send peace but the sword, and to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law." On the other hand, we find Holy Writ attributing to the true and expected Messiah actions contrary to those of Jesus. We see here that Jesus says of himself, he is not come to make peace on earth, whereas Scripture says of the true and expected Messiah, in Zechariah 9:10, "And he shall speak peace unto the heathen," etc. Jesus says he came in order "to send the sword on earth," but Scripture says, Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruninghooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." Jesus says he came "to put father and son at variance," etc, but Malachi says (at the end of his book) that "before the coming of the true Messiah the prophet Elijah shall appear,

and turn the heart of the fathers to their children, and the heart of the children to their fathers." Jesus says, concerning himself, Matthew 20:28, that he is not come to be served by the son of man, but to serve others. Concerning the true Messiah, however, Scripture says, Psalm 72:11, "Yea, all kings shall prostrate themselves before him; all nations shall serve him." And Zechariah 9:10, "His dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the end of the earth." Thus states also Daniel, 7:27, "And all rulers shall serve him and obey him."

3rdly. As to the period of his existence, it is evident that he did not come at the time foretold by the prophets; for they predicted the advent of the Messiah to happen at the latter days, see Isaiah 2:2, "And it shall come to pass in the latter days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established on the top of the mountains," etc. Further we read there, verse 4, concerning the king Messiah, "And he shall judge among the nations and arbitrate among many people, and they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruninghooks," etc. This is also recorded in Scripture concerning the wars of Gog and Magog, which are to take place in the time of the king Messiah. Vide Ezekiel 38:8, "After many days thou shalt be visited; in the latter years thou shalt come into the land that is brought back from the sword," as will be explained in the proper place. The same is evident from Hosea, 3:5, "Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the Lord their God, and David their king, and shall revere the Lord and His goodness in the latter days." So we read also in Daniel 2:28, "And (God) maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days." Which passage refers to the subsequent prophecy, *ibid* verse 44, "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the sovereignty shall not be left to other people," etc. Hence we see clearly that the prophets predicted that the coming of the true Messiah would happen at the "latter days," and not before.

4thly. We have to consider the promises contained in the words of the prophets, which were not fulfilled in the time of Jesus, but are to be realized in future at the time of the true Messiah, who is still expected. They may be classed under the following heads:-

(a.) At the time of the king Messiah there is to be only one kingdom and one king, namely, the true king Messiah. But the other empires and their rulers shall cease at that period, as we read in Daniel 2:44, "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever." Whereas, we now actually see that many empires, different in their laws and habits, are still in existence; and that in each empire a different king is ruling; consequently the Messiah is not yet come.

(b.) At the time of the king Messiah, there is to be in the world but one creed and one religion, and that is the religion of Israel, as is proved by Isaiah (52:1), "Awake, awake, put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean." And further (chapter 66:17), "Who sanctify themselves and purify themselves [we prefer the literal translation of this obscure passage to the unwarranted and still more obscure translation of the Authorised Version] in the gardens, behind one in the midst of them who eat the flesh of the swine, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together saith the Lord." "And (verse 23) it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come and worship before me, saith the Lord." Moreover, it is written in Zechariah (14:16), "And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles." In the same book (chapter 8:23) we read, "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men of nations of diverse languages shall take hold, even shall take hold of the skirt of a Jew [Authorised Version renders it "of him that is a Jew"], saying, We will go with you; for we have heard that God is with you." There are many other passages in that book to the same effect.

(c.) At the time of the Messiah, the idolatrous images and their memorial, as also the false prophets and the spirit of profanity are to vanish from the earth, as may be seen in Zechariah 13:2, "And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols from the earth, and they shall no more be remembered, also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit [literally 'the spirit of uncleanness'] to pass away from the earth." So also it is written in Isaiah 2:18, "And the idols he shall utterly abolish." So it is also said in Zephaniah 2:11, "The Lord will be terrible unto them, for he will cause all the gods of the earth to waste away, and men shall worship Him, every one from his place, even all the isles of the heathen."

(d.) At the time of the Messiah, there will be no sins and iniquities in the world, particularly not among the Israelitish nation. Thus we find in the law (Deuteronomy 30:6), "And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart and the heart of thy seed to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live." Again, in Zephaniah 3:13, "The remnant of Israel shall not do iniquity, nor speak lies, neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth." Again, in Jeremiah 3:17, "At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord, and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the Lord, to Jerusalem, neither shall they walk any more after the imagination of their evil heart." Again, in Ezekiel 36:25, "And I will sprinkle clean water upon you: from all

your impurity, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. And I will give unto you a new heart, and a new spirit will I put within you, and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments and do them." Moreover, see Ezekiel 37:23, "Neither shall they defile themselves any more with the idols nor with their abominations, nor with their transgressions, and I will save them out of all their dwelling-places wherein they have sinned, and I will cleanse them, and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, and David my servant shall be king over them, and they shall have one shepherd, and they shall walk in my judgments and observe my statutes and do them."

(e.) At the time of the king Messiah and after the war with Gog and Magog there will be peace and tranquility throughout the world, and men will no longer require any weapons of war. So it is written in Isaiah 2:4, "And they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." See also Ezekiel 39:9, "And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the bucklers, the bows and the arrows, and the handstaves and the spears, and they shall burn them with fire seven years (ibid verse 10) so that they shall take no wood out of the field, neither cut down any out of the forests, for with the weapons shall they kindle the fire." With these words agrees the prophecy of Hosea 2:20, according to the division of chapters in the Hebrew Bibles, (in the English version it is chapter 2 verse 18) "And I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and I will make them to lie down safely." So says also Zechariah 9:10, "And the battlebow shall be cut off, and he shall speak peace unto the heathen," etc.

(f.) At the time of the king Messiah there will be peace in the Holy Land between the ferocious and domestic animals, so that they will not injure each other, and much less injure a human being, as is evident from the following prophecies of Isaiah 11:6, "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid, and the calf and the young lion, and the fatling together, and a little child shall lead them." (Verse 7) "And the cow and the bear shall feed together; their young ones shall lie down together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox." (Verse 8) "And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice's den." (Verse 9) "They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord," etc. and (ibid 65:25) "And the wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock, and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the Lord." (See also Ezekiel 34:25) "And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to

cease out of the land, and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods." (Verse 28) "And they shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast of the land devour them," etc. (See also Hosea 2:20, or in the English version, 18) "And in that day will I make a covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground," etc.

(g.) At the time of the Messiah there will be no troubles, cares, and anxieties, among the restored Israelites, who will then be blessed with a prolonged and more happy life, as is foretold in the following passages of Isaiah (65:16). "He who blesseth himself in the earth shall bless himself in the God of truth, and he that sweareth in the earth shall swear by the God of truth, because the former troubles are forgotten, and because they are hid from mine eyes. (Verse 19) "And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people, and the voice of weeping shall no more be heard in her, nor the voice of crying." (Verse 20) "There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days, for the child shall die a hundred years old, but the sinner being a hundred years old shall be accursed." (Verse 21) "And they shall build houses and inhabit them, and they shall plant vineyards and eat the fruit of them." (Verse 22) "They shall not build and another inhabit, they shall not plant and another eat, for as the days of a tree shall be the days of my people, and mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands."

(h.) At the time of the Messiah the Shechinah (effulgency of divine presence) shall return to Israel as in former days, and the people of Israel increase in prophecy, wisdom, and knowledge, as may be seen by the following quotations from the prophets. (Ezekiel 37:26) "Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will establish and multiply them, and set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore." (Verse 27) "My residence also shall be among them. Yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people." (Verse 28) "And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore." (Ibid 39:29) "Neither will I hide my face any more from them, for I have poured out my Spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord God." (Ibid 43:7) "And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever," etc. (Ibid 48:35) "And the name of the city from that day shall be, 'The Lord is there'" (Joel 2:27) "And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the Lord your God, and there is none else; and my people shall never be ashamed." (Ibid 3:1), in the English Version 2:28) "And it shall come to pass afterwards, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions." (Ibid 3:17) "So ye shall know that I am the Lord your God dwelling in Zion my holy mountain: then

shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through it any more." (Ibid 3:21) "For I will avenge their blood that I had not avenged, for the Lord dwelleth in Zion." (Zechariah 2:14; in the English Version, 2:10) "Sing and rejoice, O daughter of Zion, for, lo! I come and dwell in the midst of thee, saith the Lord." (Isaiah 11:9) "For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea." (Jeremiah 31:34) "And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall know me, from the lowest of them to the highest, saith the Lord: for I will forgive their iniquity, and remember their sin no more."

The above indications pointed out by the prophets as indispensable attributes of the true Messiah, have not been fulfilled in Jesus the Nazarene. Nor have we hitherto seen realized the prophetic assurances already named, or others that we have omitted, to avoid prolixity. And we therefore arrive at the just conclusion, that the true and expected Messiah has not yet come. In him alone all the predicted attributes undoubtedly will be manifested, and through him alone and in no other way, the scriptural promises will be accomplished.

Chapter 2: The virgin birth

Matthew 1:22 and 23, sets forth that Jesus was born of a virgin, in order that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, "Behold, a virgin shall be with child and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel."

The reader will remember from the First Part of this work that we have had frequent occasion to speak of the method employed in the New Testament and other Christian works, of citing from our Scriptures certain passages, which, on careful examination, have no reference whatever to the immediate subject. Thus they quote also the passage from Isaiah 7:14, "behold הַעַלְוִיָּה (meaning the young woman and not virgin) "Is with child, and about to bring forth a son." The prophecy was given to Ahaz, King of Judah, in order to allay his apprehensions regarding the two kings who were to come to carry on war against Jerusalem. What connection could there subsist between a sign necessary to convince the King of Jerusalem, and the event of the birth of Jesus which happened so many centuries after? How could Ahaz receive consolation from prophecy, the fulfillment of which he was not to live to see?

Chapter 3: Mary not a virgin after the birth of Jesus, Jesus not called Emmanuel

Matthew 1 concludes with these words concerning Joseph, the husband of Mary; "And [he] knew her not until she had brought forth her first-born son, and he called his name Jesus." The wording of this passage shows, in the first

place, that after she had brought forth "Her first-born son" Joseph did "know her;" and secondly, the appellation of Jesus the "first-born son," proves that the same mother bore more children than one, otherwise the term first-born could not be applicable. This harmonizes well with Matthew 13:55, where Jesus, "the carpenter's son," is mentioned together with his brothers "James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas." This passage is an incontrovertible contradiction of the opinion of those who consider Mary to have been a virgin before and after she had given birth to Jesus.

The English version of Matthew 1:23, has, "And they shall call his name Emmanuel;" but in the Hebrew original [Isaiah 7:14], we have וקראת "and she shall call."

It is also a striking fact that the name Emmanuel was not given to Jesus by the virgin. Nor do we find that the Emmanuel mentioned in Isaiah was ever to be considered the Messiah.

Chapter 4: Matthew's misapplication of Hosea 11:1

Matthew 2:14 and 15, "When he [Joseph] arose, he took the young child and his mother by night and departed into Egypt. And was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, "Out of Egypt have I called my son."

The misapplication of the evidence taken from Hosea 11:1, is perfectly obvious. He speaks of the chosen people delivered from bondage. He says, "When Israel was young I did love it, and out of Egypt I called my son." This allusion to the pristine state of Israel fully agrees with the message Moses gave to Pharaoh. Exodus 4:22 and 23, "Thus saith the Lord, Israel is my first-born son, and I have said unto thee, send away my son that he may serve me."

Chapter 5: Matthew's errant use of Jeremiah's prophecy (31:15) of Rachel weeping

Matthew 2:16-18, "And Herod sent forth and slew all the children that were born in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, "Rachel [was] weeping for her children, and would not be comforted because they are not."

The construction of these words of the prophet is incompatible with what follows. For we read in the same chapter (31) of Jeremiah, verse 17, "And the children shall return to their boundaries." This cannot mean slain, but only captive, children. The ten tribes are here alluded to as the captives who are mentioned under the collected name

Ephraim, because their first king Jeroboam was of the tribe of Ephraim, the descendant of Rachel. Had Jeremiah's prophecy had any connection with the extermination of the infants of Bethlehem Judah, it would not have been for Rachel to weep, but for Leah, the ancestress of the children of Judah. See chapter 27 of Matthew.

Chapter 6: Matthew's invention of the prophecy of Messiah being from Nazareth

Matthew 2:23, "And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene."

This quotation has been falsely made, and is not to be found in any part of our prophetic writings; which subject has been more fully treated of in the former part of this work. See chapter 23 of FIRST PART.

Chapter 7: The temptation of Jesus

Matthew 4:1-11, "Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the Devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterwards an hungered. And when the tempter came to him he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the Devil taketh him into the Holy City, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the Temple, and saith to him, If thou be a Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give His angels charge concerning Thee; and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus saith unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the Devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them, and saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan; for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve."

The same subject occurs in Luke 4:1-13. The reader must certainly perceive by this narrative that the Jesus tempted by Satan, is not intended to pass for a God incarnate. For can any man, in his sound senses, suppose that Satan would have presumed to tempt one whom he knew to be a God; or can it be imagined that he would have dared, as a creature, to lead him away by force against his will? Reason recoils from such a belief.

Chapter 8: Jesus dwelt in Capernaum, said to be foretold by Isaiah 9

Matthew 4:13-15, "And leaving Nazareth, he [Jesus] came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphthali. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphthali, by the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles."

Let the reader refer to Isaiah 8:23 (verse 9:1 in the English version), and see whether the detached passage, as given in the New Testament, proves anything relating to Jesus. There we read that the anguish is not abating which is poured down upon "her" [Israel]. "The first time it came lightly upon the land of Zebulun, and the land of Naphthali; and the latter time, it fell heavily upon her by the way of the sea, on the side of Jordan, and the boundary of the Gentiles." The prophet had spoken of the preponderance of the empire of Ashur over that of Israel, and he stated that Tiglath Pileassar, King of Assyria, had at first extended his conquest over the lands of Zebulun and Naphthali; and therefore the calamity was deemed to be confined to a narrow compass in the sight of Israel. But afterwards the misery became oppressive, when Sennacherib marched against Judah, and took all its fortified cities; so that Jerusalem was the only country that escaped. The whole country of Palestine being thus ravaged, the prophet pointed out the utmost limits of the country as the marks of the extent of the devastation; hence the allusion to Jordan and the sea, which were the boundaries of the nation. The borders of the neighboring Philistines were therefore called "the boundaries of the Philistines." When Sennacherib came up to attack Jerusalem, the angel of the Lord destroyed 185,000 warriors. Then it was that, according to Isaiah 9:1, "The people who had walked in the darkness of trouble saw"—namely, the light of deliverance, after the total fall of Sennacherib. That salvation is termed "light," is shown by the expression of Esther 8:16, "Unto the Jews was light." Isaiah continues, chapter 9:2, "Thou hast made great the nation (namely, in their position among other nations); Thou hast increased their joy before Thee, according to the joy in harvest;" thus expressing their gratitude and devout sentiments at the miraculous escape from the overwhelming number of the enemy, and their exultation during the distribution of the spoil found in the Assyrian camp. [Isaiah 9:3] "For Thou hast broken the yoke of his burden;" that is, Thou hast frustrated the designs of the cruelty of the Assyrian King; "And the staff of his shoulder, and the rod of his oppression, as in the day of Midian." [When Gideon, with a handful of men, routed in the night the army of the invading Midianites; so that also then a supernatural help saved Israel from utter ruin.] For the attack of the assailants was as the shock of an earthquake—that is to say, this warfare differed from all others in which garments were rolled in blood; whereas in

this war there was no bloodshed by human weapons, but the weapons of destruction were [Isaiah 9:4] "burning and of full fire." The prophet then continues to say [Isaiah 9:5], "For unto us a child has been born, unto us a son has been given, and the government has [fallen] on his shoulders." By this prediction was meant Hezekiah, King of Judah, in whose days the signal deliverance happened. This prophecy was given to Ahaz after the birth of Hezekiah, and in consideration of the future piety of this child, this Divine consolation was given. The son who was given us, and who was proved to have been Hezekiah, was nine years old when Ahaz ascended the throne.

Chapter 9: Fishers of men is bad metaphor (but is appropriate for Christianity)

Matthew 4:18-19, "And Jesus, walking by the shores of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, for they were fishermen, and he said unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men."

The same is related in Luke 5:10, "And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men."

This metaphorical language employed by Jesus, appears most inapt and undignified. The net catches the unwary by stealth, and those who are caught are destined to death by those who spread the net.

Chapter 10: Doctrine that the law of Moses was superceded by Jesus contradicts Jesus

Matthew 5:17-19, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets. I am not come to destroy but to fulfill. For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law till all be fulfilled. Whosoever, therefore, shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven."

So in Luke 16:17, "And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away than one tittle of the law to fail."

These words are in direct opposition to the belief and the assertion of the Christians, that the law of Moses has been superseded by the coming of Jesus. Thus, circumcision is replaced by baptism, and the sanctity of the seventh day is deferred to the keeping of the first day of the week. With the same inexcusable freedom, many other Divine laws have been rejected by the Christians, only few having been retained, such as those regarding incest and moral enactments, respect to parents, love to our neighbor, charity to the poor, avoidance of theft, rapine, adultery,

murder, shedding of blood, and some other crimes which reason enforces, and which other nations, who were without revelation, had acknowledged before the coming of Jesus. On this subject we have enlarged in Chapter 19 of the First Part of this work.

Chapter 11: Matthew's imaginary commandment of Moses to "hate thy neighbor" refuted

Matthew 5:43, "Ye have heard that it hath been said, "Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thy enemy."

This passage, which is pretended by Matthew to be taken from some part of our Scriptures, originated partly in his own imagination. Scripture no where bids us to hate our enemy, but teaches us a totally different doctrine; for we find in Exodus 23:4-5, "If thou meet thine enemy's ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou seest the ass of him that hateth thee, lying under his burden, and wouldst forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him." See also Leviticus 19:17-18, "Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart: thou shalt rebuke thy neighbour and not suffer sin upon him. Thou shalt not avenge nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. I am the Lord." Again, in the Book of Proverbs 24:17, "When thine enemy falleth do not rejoice, and when he stumbleth let not thine heart rejoice." And *ibid.* 25:21, "If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat, and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink."

Chapter 12: Doctrine of the divinity of Jesus examined

Matthew 8:19-20, "And a certain scribe came and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man hath nowhere to lay his head." The same saying is recorded in Luke 9:57.

This passage we deem a strong proof of the consciousness of Jesus that he was not God. For, if he had really been filled with such a conceit, why should he have called himself the Son of Man? And moreover, why should he have dissuaded others from relying on him? Perhaps he bore in mind the admonition given in Psalm 146:3, "Do not rely on princes nor trust in the son of man, for salvation belongeth not unto him." Or perhaps the words of Jeremiah in chapter 17:5, "Cursed is the man who relieth on man." Had he imagined he was God, why should he have said he had nowhere to lay his head? Would he not have considered the whole earth to be his own resting-place; for does not the Psalmist remind us in Psalm 24:1, "That the earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof, the world, and the inhabitants therein?"

Chapter 13: Jesus claimed to bring strife, not peace, opposing prophecies of Messiah's peace

Matthew 10:34-35, "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."

The same matter is treated on in Luke 12:51, and is a strong indication that Jesus was not filled with that spirit of peace so indissolubly attached to the office of Messiah. For, regarding the expected Messiah, Zechariah, in chapter 9:10, says, "And he will speak peace unto the nations." Concerning that period it was prophesied by Isaiah in chapter 2:4; and in Micah 4:3, "Nation shall not lift up the sword against nation." How much less will it then be allowable that a man should "be set at variance against his father?" On the contrary, the Divine promise runs thus (in conclusion of Malachi), "And he shall restore the heart of the fathers unto the children, and the heart of the children unto their fathers."

Chapter 14: Using the reasoning that defends the trinity, it and the apostles are a unity

Matthew 10:40, Jesus is made to say to his apostles, "He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me."

By this expression the Christians are reduced to the necessity of believing that Jesus and his apostles are identical; and as they are taught that three make one, they ought, by parity of reasoning, to deduce the inference from the present passage, that the trinity, with the twelve apostles, make altogether one unity.

Chapter 15: Jesus' claim that John the Baptist was Elijah refuted

Matthew 11:13-14, Jesus is made to say, "All the prophets and the law prophesied until John, and if ye will receive it, this is Elias which was for to come." See the same passage in Luke 16:16.

From this it would seem that it was intended to inculcate a belief, that the law and the prophecies had only a certain temporary object in view, which was to find its point of completion in John, a contemporary of Jesus. On the other hand, Jesus declared in Matthew 5:17, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets; I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill." (See our opinion on this subject in Chapter 19 of the First Part of this work). We would ask the question, how did he fulfill the predicted ingathering of

the Ten Tribes, and the carrying on of the war against Gog and Magog? We would also notice a discrepancy between the opinion held out in this chapter of Matthew, that John was the Elias (Elijah) of the Bible, and the following statement made by the author of the Gospel of John: "And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou the Prophet? And he answered, No." (See Chapter 39 of the First Part of this work).

Chapter 16: A proof by Jesus himself against the trinity doctrine (Matt. 12:32, Luke 12:10)

Matthew 12:32, "And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man it shall be forgiven him, but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come." See also Luke 12:10.

Both Matthew and Luke acknowledge, by this warning, that Jesus is the Son of Man; and that he and the Holy Ghost are not identical, consequently they were fully convinced that there is no doctrine in the Testament enforcing the belief in a triune deity, and that such a notion rests merely on imagination.

Chapter 17: Another challenge to Mary's virginity from Matthew 13:55, Mark 6:3

Matthew 13:55; it is related there that the Jews said of Jesus, "Is not this the carpenters son? And is not his mother called Mary, and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us?" See also Mark 6:3. How then can the Christians constantly worship Mary as a virgin, she having given birth to the several brothers and sisters of Jesus?

Chapter 18: Jesus teaches against kosher laws of Moses (Matthew 15:1-25, Mark 7:1-24)

Matthew 15:1 to 25, When the Pharisees blamed his disciples for eating without previously washing their hands, Jesus argued that whatever enters the mouth does not defile man, but that defiles him which goes out of the mouth. The same is said in Mark 7 from the beginning to verse 24.

If that were true, why should the Law of Moses prohibit us from eating certain unclean things? See also Leviticus 11:43, "And ye shall not defile yourselves with them [viz. the unclean animals] lest ye grow unclean through them." This shows, that a certain class of food is considered by Divine authority as impure and unlawful. By what right then did Jesus dare to contradict the law, and to absolve his Jewish followers from prohibited meats? If unclean food

did not defile the mouth of the eater, why did the Apostles forbid the eating of blood and of the flesh of strangled animals? And did not Adam commit a sin, even according to the belief of the Christians, by the act of eating of that of which he was enjoined not to eat? How much strong drink is able to defile the soul of man is early demonstrated in Scripture, as we learn from the history of Noah and Lot. While on the other hand the expression of Jesus that words coming out of the mouth of man alone defile him, is subject to great limitation. For all praises and thanksgiving offered up to the Almighty, as well as all wise, moral and social converse do not defile the soul.

Chapter 19: A 2nd proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (Matthew 19:16, Mark 10:21)

Matthew 19:16 and subsequent verses, "And behold one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is God;" an expression which proves that Jesus is not God. Then Jesus continued, "If thou desirest spiritual salvation keep the commandments." An injunction indicating that there is no salvation without the observance of the law of Moses. He [the querist] saith unto him, "Which?" Jesus said, "Thou shalt do no murder. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witness. Honor thy father and thy mother, and thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." Further he said, "If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that which thou hast and give to the poor." The same is to be found in Mark 10:21.

In Luke 18:22, Jesus thereby advises, "Sell all that thou hast and distribute unto the poor," etc. Jesus, in saying there is none good but one, that is God, taught his followers a monotheistic principle. He taught them at the same time that salvation depends on the observance of the Divine commandments. All these injunctions, given by Jesus, are renounced by Christians; and thus, having thrown off those inconvenient and onerous observances taught in the New Testament, they might well allege that the severe precepts of the Mosaic Law were abrogated, and must give place before a Lawgiver whose laws they think proper to disregard. We would ask, which precept is the most severe, that of Jesus, which demands that a man should divest himself of his property for the benefit of the poor, or the Mosaic Law, which ordains that a tithe only should be devoted to holy purposes, leaving the remainder at the free disposal of the owner of the property?

Chapter 20: A 3rd proof against the trinity doctrine by Jesus (Matthew 20:23, Mark 10)

Matthew 20:23, Jesus, addressing his disciples, namely the two children of Zebedee, says, "To sit at my right hand and at my left is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them, for whom it is prepared of my Father."

The reader will find the same idea expressed in Mark 10. Now if the Son is less powerful than the Father, how can it be asserted that the Father and Son are all one?

Chapter 21: Jesus, because of his self-declared status as servant, is not divine (Matt. 20:28)

Matthew 20:28, Jesus thus communicates to his disciples, "Even as the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister," etc. The same is stated in Mark 10:45.

By this passage, Jesus makes the declaration destructive of the dogma of his divinity, that he, being the son of man, is a servant and not a master; or in other words, that he is not the King Messiah of whom it was said of Zechariah, in his book, chapter 9:10, "And his kingdom shall extend from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth." Also, in Psalm 72:11, "And all kings shall bow down unto him, all nations shall serve him." And in Daniel 7:27, "And all rulers shall serve and obey him."

Chapter 22: Error regarding death of Zacharius prove non-divine inspiration (Matt. 23:35)

Matthew 23:35, "That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth from the blood of the righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar."

This reproach rests on an error regarding the names, for it was Zechariah, the son of Jehoiada the priest, whom they slew (See 2 Chronicles 24:20). It is impossible to admit the attempted reconciliation according to which Zechariah, the son of Jehoiada the priest, and Zechariah, the son of Berachiah, are identical. For the priest of that name was slain in the days of Joash, King of Judah, about two hundred and fifty-four years prior to the destruction of the temple; while the prophet Zechariah did not prophesy until the second year of Darius, the son of Artachsasta, during the Babylonian captivity. Such errors in the mouth of Jesus are decidedly unfavorable to the divine inspiration attributed to him, as well as to the authors of the New Testament.

Chapter 23: Disagreement in stories of Jesus' anointment of oil prove non-divine inspiration

Matthew 26:6-7, "Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, there came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head." In Mark 14:3, the narrative is given in the following words, "And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard, very precious, and she brake the box and poured it on his head." In Luke 7:37-38, however, the version is far different; "And behold a woman brought an alabaster box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind him, and anointed them with ointment." Then Jesus said to Simon, the master of the house (verse 46), "My head with oil thou didst not anoint, but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment." In John 12:3 the story is narrated thus: "Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus."

These extracts, from the several books of the New Testament, are curious specimens of the want of agreement between the several authors, who of necessity would have been in perfect unanimity, had they been under the influence of Divine inspiration.

Chapter 24: Jesus and God aren't one, especially in will, shown by passion story prayer

Matthew 26:39, "And he (Jesus) went a little further and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O, my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt." See likewise Mark 14:35, and Luke 22:41.

This passage refutes the Christian belief, that Jesus offered himself spontaneously as the sacrifice for the salvation of mankind. If that had been the case, why should he have hesitated and prayed for the removal of the bitter cup of his portion; and why should he have exclaimed, "My God, my God, why hast Thou forsaken me!" (see Matthew 27:46). This is another proof that the Father and the Son are not identical, and that the design of the one does not accord with that of the other.

Chapter 25: Misapplication of the passage re: 30 pieces of silver examined (Matt. 27:9-10)

Matthew 27:9-10, "Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, 'And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, and

whom they of the children of Israel did value, and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.'"

Here again, we meet with the usual misapplication of Scriptural passages. The quotation, taken from Zechariah 11:12-13 runs as follows: "So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the Lord said unto me, Cast it unto the potter," etc. The unbiased reader need merely refer to the context from which this passage is extracted, in order to obtain the conviction that the prophet wished to convey a far different idea than Matthew found in it. Zechariah, in the chapter before us, represents the fate of the children of Judah during the captivity, who had become the prey of their enemy for having transgressed the commandments of the Almighty, and hence he designates the Jews of the second temple as the flock of the slaughter.

The prophet Zechariah's account (in chapter 11:7) of his taking two staves, the name of the one being "Beauty," and the name of the other "Bands," must not be viewed in its literal, but in its metaphorical sense. The staves signify the leaders of Israel, for the shepherd conducts his flock by means of the staff or crook in his hand. Now the prophet hereby intimates that Israel would be treated according to the merit of their doings. The Staff "Beauty" (i.e. lenient treatment) was used in the early days of the second temple, when such leaders as Nehemiah and Zerubbabel stood at the helm of Government; while the misgovernment of the succeeding rulers, which crippled and ultimately destroyed the energies and well-being of Israel, was designated "Bands" (i.e., harsh treatment). The simultaneous death of three righteous leaders, alluded to by the prophet, may have been in reference to Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, after whose decease severe calamities came upon the Jewish nation.

The shepherd in the prophecy claims his wages—that is to say, he demands that the pious observance of the Divine statutes should be offered as a compensation for the special favors of the Almighty. The thirty pieces of silver are a figurative representation of the righteous men of the time, who were cast to their potter (i.e. literally thrown upon the mercy of their Former or creator). The Staff (termed Bands) was broken' for we learn from our history that the misrule prevailing in Jerusalem was productive of Israel's overthrow. Indeed, it seemed as if every successive bad Government had been destined to be the avenger of the misdeeds of its predecessor. Whether it be correct or not, to refer the details of the prophecy to certain known historical characters, this much is evident, that the political government of the Jews, and their destiny, are the circumstances alluded to by the prophet. No thinking man can, however, admit that the prophecy had reference to Jesus, in whose fate his Jewish contemporaries were so little concerned.

Chapter 26: A 4th proof against the trinity doctrine by Jesus (Matt 27:46, Mark 15:34)

Matthew 27:46, "And about the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, 'Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani,'—that is to say, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?'" See the same passage in Mark 15:34.

By this exclamation, Jesus clearly announced that he was not a God, but was like other mortals, who invoke God in the day of trouble.

Chapter 27: Another proof against the divinity of Jesus from Matthew 28:18)

Matthew 28:18, "And Jesus came and spake unto them (i.e. his disciples), All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth."

This passage does not show that he was Divine Being; for, had he been so, he would not have asserted that the power was given to him. To God, nothing can be given; for "Unto him belongeth the dominion and the power." He is the Giver, and not the Receiver. It could not be maintained that Jesus received the dominion from his Father, for in that case the Bestower and the Acceptor must incontestably be considered as two separate and distinct Beings. This concludes our views concerning the book of Matthew.

Chapter 28: Misrepresentation of the passage regarding David eating the shewbread

Mark 2:25-26, "And he [Jesus] said unto them, Have ye never read what David did when he had need and was an hungered, he and they that were with him? How when he went into the house of God, in the days of Abiathar, the high priest, and did eat the shewbread which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests, and gave thereof to him that were with him." This passage is also to be found in Matthew 12:3-4, and in Luke 6:3-4.

All these authors have fallen into the same error, and labour under the same misconception. For this happened in the time of Ahimelech, the priest, and not in the time of Abiathar, as may be seen in 1 Samuel 21:2 [21-1], "David came to Nob, to Ahimelech, the priest," etc. But Abiathar was one of the sons of Ahimelech; the son of Ahitub, who escaped and fled after David. Now, from the express question put to him, we see that David came alone to Ahimelech, and that no one was with him: "Why art thou alone, and no man with thee?"

Chapter 29: Mutual discord between Jesus and his family

Mark 3:31-35, "There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him; and the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold thy mother and thy brethren without seek thee. And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren. For whoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother." The same subject occurs in Matthew, at the close of chapter 12; and in Luke 8:19-21.

It appears from these statements, that his own mother, and brothers, and sister, would not believe in him, and be his disciples, and that he would not go to meet them who were of his own flesh. The allusion to mutual discord between them is confirmed by the statement in John 7:5, "For neither did his brethren believe in him."

Chapter 30: Examination of Jesus' cursing of the fig tree (Mark 11:11-13, Matthew 21:18)

Mark 9:12-14, "And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he (Jesus) was hungry; and, seeing a fig-tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon; and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, as the season of figs was not yet come. And Jesus answered, and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee for evermore." See also Matthew 21:19.

Jesus acted here neither as a Divine person, nor as a man in whom the Divine Spirit dwelt. For he surely might have known that the fig-tree bears its fruit only at the appointed season; nor would any discreet person cast a malediction on a tree merely for being thus disappointed. Moreover, if Jesus, by his mere word, was able to render a tree barren, might he not as well, by the power of his word, have made the tree bring forth its fruit at the bidding of the moment, in order to appease his hunger? I, having once made use of this argument with a Christian, he explained it away by asserting that the passage has only a spiritual signification, and that the fig-tree named was but a symbol used by Jesus to represent the Jewish nation, in like manner as the prophets designate them the "vine-tree," and that Jesus had cursed Israel for having rejected him as their spiritual teacher. I rejoined that, in our prophecies regarding the time of the expected and true Messiah, we are promised that in the days of the messiah, knowledge and prophecy shall increase and prevail throughout the world; as it is said in Joel 2:27-28, "You shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the Lord your God, and none else, and my people shall then never again be put to shame. And then I shall pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophecy." From this prophecy, it is clear that many of the indispensable conditions, requisite for the advent of the Messiah, had not yet been fulfilled, but were still to come.

Chapter 31: Inconsistencies in the gospels concerning Mary's disbelief and her revelation

Mark 13:32, Jesus is made to say to his disciples, "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son but the Father."

Here we have a clear proof that Jesus, who is called "the son of Mary," is not a God, seeing that he could not foretell events.

Chapter 32: Inconsistencies in the gospels concerning Mary's disbelief and her revelation

Luke 1:26-33, There it is related that the angel Gabriel came as a messenger sent by God to Mary in her virgin state, when she was espoused to Joseph of the house of David, and that He announced to her she would conceive and bear a son, who would be holy, and be called a son of the highest; that the throne of David would be assigned to him by the Lord God for occupation, and that he would reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there should be no end.

The statement disagrees with those made in other parts of the New Testament, and casts strong suspicion on the veracity of a book asserted to be written under the influence of inspiration. If Mary had received such a divine message, why did she and her children refuse faith in, and obedience to that Son of God, and why did she and her offspring keep away from the circle of the disciples of him whom she had borne through the intervention of a miracle? See Mark 3:31. A marked contrast also appears between the words of Luke 1:26, and those in John 7:5, which we had occasion to quote in a former chapter, viz., "His brethren did not believe in him." Would it not have been the duty of the virgin-mother to inform her children what a strong claim her first-born had on their pious attachment to him? Again, why did Mary name her son "Jesus?" If he were to be named Emmanuel, according to the interpretation given to the famous passage in Isaiah, which is especially cited in Matthew 1:22-23, why did the angel hold out the never-fulfilled promise that Jesus would sit on the throne of David? Moreover, why was Jesus called the descendant of David, since it is alleged that he was not the offspring of Joseph, of the house of David, but was begotten of the Holy Ghost? The number of contradictions also is increased by the words of Paul in his First Epistle to the Corinthians, chapter 15, verse 28, for there it is said, "Then shall the son also himself be subject unto him, that put all things under him." This is an additional proof that the kingdom of Jesus is not intended to continue throughout eternity, but is to be only of a temporary nature; hence, we arrive at the conclusion, from the very authorities of the Christian faith, that the Father and the Son are totally distinct personages.

Chapter 33: (?) Perceived as inapplicable by the translator, Moses Mocatta, so not included

This chapter is omitted by the translators as unimportant in itself, and inapplicable to the general argument.

Chapter 34: The gospels' own refutation of the miraculous birth of Jesus

Luke 2:33, "And Joseph and his mother marveled at those things which were spoken of him."

The child tarried "behind in Jerusalem, and his parents knew not of it." "And when they saw him they were amazed, and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing?" verse 43, 48. Ibid. 4:22, "And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?" See also John 1:45, "Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph;" and ibid. 6:42, "Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know?"

These passages afford a complete refutation of the doctrine of the miraculous conception of Jesus, and thereby undermined the groundwork of the Christian faith.

Chapter 35: Examination of the incorrect and inconsistent accounts of the genealogy of Jesus

Luke 3:23, The genealogy of Jesus, as treated in this and the subsequent verses, is contradictory to that in Matthew 1. For Luke commences thus: "The list of the descent of Jesus"—"And Jesus [as was supposed],* was the son of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Malachi," etc. etc. In Matthew, where the origin of Joseph is traced back to Solomon, the Son of David, the enumeration of the ancestors of Joseph closes in the following manner:—"And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus." We have already shown above that Matthew enumerates forty-two generations, from Abraham our father; but Luke counts only twenty-six. From these contrary statements one might fairly ask, which Joseph was the husband of Mary? Was it Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, as Luke supposes; or was it Joseph, the son of Jacob, the son of Matthan, the son of Eleazar, as Matthew supposes? If we are to believe the words of Luke, then the statement of Matthew must be incorrect, and vice versa. Luke, in tracing back the descent of Jesus to the first ancestor, says that Jesus was the son of Adam, the Son of God. Hence it would seem that Jesus has no better title to the designation of the Son of God, than every other descendant of Adam.

* The words "as was supposed," inserted here in the copies of the translators of Luke, are a gratuitous interpolation, intended to make us Jews believe that the author himself used the words, from the apprehension that he was affording an argument militating against the Divinity of Jesus.—NOTE BY THE TRANSLATOR.

Chapter 36: Non-fulfillment of Isaiah 61 in Jesus, who said he fulfilled it (Luke 4:17-21)

Luke 4:17-21, "And there was delivered unto him (to Jesus) the book of the prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, 'The Spirit of God is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poor. He hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.' And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And he said unto them, 'This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.'"

Isaiah 61:1-2 is here quoted in a garbled manner. In order to lay more stress on the healing powers attributed to Jesus, the gift of restoring sight to the blind is added to the mission of the pretended Messiah. On the other hand, it is omitted to be quoted that this would be—"A day of vengeance to our God; to comfort all mourners, to give to the mourners of Zion glory instead of ashes, the oil of gladness instead of mourning, the cloak of praise instead of a gloomy spirit." Jesus had no right to attribute to himself the glory of deeds he had not performed. Isaiah spoke here of himself. And by the words, "The Lord hath anointed me," he meant nothing more than that he had received the Divine unction as a prophet. It was he who was sent forth to offer consolation, in order that the Israelites, during their long sufferings, should not despair of the Divine aid, and of their future restoration. They, the exiled children of Israel, were addressed by the prophets "as the afflicted, the broken-hearted, the captives, the prisoners, the mourners of Zion." They alone stood in need of the prophetic consolatory promises, and to whom alone they had reference.

Chapter 37: Jesus and Paul shown not to practice what they preach re: turning the cheek

Luke 6:27-29, "Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you. Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other, and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also."

This injunction is a repetition of what is to be found in Matthew 5:39. These injunctions were and are, however, not only disregarded by the members of the Christian religion, but were not even practiced by Jesus himself in

the spirit in which the words imply. For in John 18:22, we find that Jesus, when beaten by a bye-stander, instead of offering quietly his other cheek, very naturally argued with him on the unfairness of such summary proceeding. Nor did Paul silently submit to the order given by the priest, that he should be smitten on the mouth, (Acts 23:2-3), or offer his cheek in meek contentment, but indignantly swore "God shall smite thee, thou whited wall." If the precept were broken, obviously from its extreme rigour, by the very disciple who promulgated it, it is strange to ascribe to the doctrines of Jesus, as is done in certain parts of the Gospel, a greater degree of practicability than to the original laws of Moses, a fact that must convince every thoughtful man that Christian doctrines are not always infallible.

Chapter 38: One example of illogical replies made by Jesus (Luke 9:37-41)

Luke 11:37-41, "And he [Jesus] went in and sat down to meat, and when the Pharisees saw it, they marveled that he [Jesus] had not first washed before dinner." To this expression of purpose Jesus responded, "Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without make that which is within also? But rather give alms of such things as ye have, and behold all things are clean unto you."

These arguments are merely quoted here, to show how illogical some of the replies are, which are put into the mouth of the assumed Son of God.

The negligent, and those who are indifferent to cleanliness, might screen themselves under such dicta; plain sense, however, would have suggested an answer of a different character. Other sayings of similar inconsistency in the replies of Jesus are recorded in the book of Matthew.

Chapter 39: Examination of the alleged salvation of Jesus in light of poor Lazarus

Luke 16:22-23, Lazarus is stated to enjoy after his death the bliss of immortality in the bosom of Abraham, whilst the rich man, who indulged in the pleasures of this world, is to suffer the torments of hell. It is further said, that there subsists an infinite distinction between the abode of glory and that of perdition.

According to this account, it does not appear that either Abraham or Lazarus were after their death doomed to the punishment of hell, although the alleged work of the redemption of mankind had not yet been achieved by Jesus. We are therefore at a loss to know what the Christians mean by salvation wrought by Jesus, and what can be the danger of the original sin, when we see that it did not affect those who died unredeemed.

Chapter 40: God apparently did not accept Jesus' prayer to forgive the Jews

Luke 23:34, "Then Jesus said, Father, pardon them, they know not what they do."

This appeal refutes the opinion of the Christians, who maintain that the Jews suffer the punishments of the Almighty for having put Jesus to death.

Can the Christians believe that God would not accept the supplication of Jesus?

Whether the supplication was accepted or not accepted, it is clear that the Jews do not lie under the punishment of the Almighty, in consequence of that deed.

Chapter 41: John the Baptist denies being Elijah (John 1:21) in contradiction to Jesus

John 1:21, "And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he said, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No."

This verse completely contradicts the statement made in Matthew 11:13-14, according to which John is included in the list of prophets, and is held to be the last of them. The words used in that book, which we have had occasion to adduce, run as follows: "All the prophets and the law prophesied until John; and if ye will receive it, this is Elias [Elijah], which was for to come." In Matthew 17:12-13, Jesus, in alluding to John, affirms that the forerunner of himself as a Messiah had come, although he had not been acknowledged as such. He says there, "Elias [Elijah], is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him what ever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of Man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood that he spake of John the Baptist."

Once, on representing this contradiction to a Christian, he evaded a direct answer by the retort, that Samuel likewise denied his true mission, for he told Saul that he was on his way to offer up sacrifices, while his real object was to anoint David as King of Israel.

The cogency of this reply is not apparent, for Samuel made no secret of his mission to David to whom he had to communicate the Divine will, but observed the necessary caution with Saul, to whom he had not been sent. Different, however, was the case with the pretended Elias.

If he [John], had to bring the Jews the tidings of the advent of the Messiah, he very strangely performed his duty, by denying his character and concealing his message.

Chapter 42: Another proof against Mary's continued state of virginity after Jesus' birth

John 2:4, "Jesus saith unto her (viz., to his mother Mary), Woman, what have I to do with thee?" and *ibid.* chapter 19:26, "When Jesus, therefore, saw his mother and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son."

If he had believed that his mother had miraculously given birth to him, and still continued in her virgin state, would he not have addressed her by the more endearing and exalting appellation than the simple term woman? The mode in which he addressed his mother here, and on various other occasions narrated in the New Testament, shows that he was not at all impressed with the sanctity of the commandment, "Honour thy father and thy mother."

Chapter 43: Jesus' unreasonable answer to a request for a sign from the Jews (John 2:18-20)

John 2:18-20, "Then answered the Jews, and said unto him [viz., to Jesus], What sign showest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?"

Could Jesus prove his divine character by thus advising the Jews to lay a sacrilegious hand on the sacred edifice? And, moreover, it was most unreasonable to ask that the Jews, who did not believe in his divine power, should commit an action that should consign the temple to everlasting destruction, merely for the sake of testing the reality of his character.

Chapter 44: A 6th proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (John 6:38)

John 6:38, "For I [viz., Jesus], came down from heaven not to do mine own will, but the will of Him that sent me."

If Jesus alludes here to the descent of his soul to the earth, in order to inhabit the body, then he has pronounced a common-place doctrine, for every human body is possessed of a soul; but if he meant that he descended from heaven in flesh, then the assertion is at variance with the other accounts, according to which he was born of a woman in Bethlehem, in a manger. See Luke 2:7. Moreover, we see here an acknowledgment of the all-important fact of his non-identity with the Godhead, as he professed to be only the agent of Him who sent him.

John 7:5, "For neither did his brethren believe in him." If his own brothers, men of the same flesh and blood, and the nearest judges of the powers attributed to him, felt no inducement to admit his pretensions; surely we Jews may be excused for discrediting what his own contemporaries and brothers rejected as incredible.

Chapter 45: Jesus own brothers did not believe in him, why should we?

John 7:5, "For neither did his brethren believe in him."

If his own brothers, men of the same flesh and blood, and the nearest judges of the powers attributed to him, felt no inducement to admit his pretensions; surely we Jews may be excused for discrediting what his own contemporaries and brothers rejected as incredible.

Chapter 46: Tradition of Jesus' teacher exposed in Talmud, against John's assertion

John 7:15, "And the Jews marveled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?"

Talmudical tradition informs us that he had a teacher, who was named R. Joshua Ben Perachiah, and that master and scholar had fled into Egypt to escape the persecution of King Janai.

Chapter 47: The adulterous woman given a lax sentence goes against Torah

John 8:3-5, "And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, they said unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what sayest thou?" [John 8:7] "And he said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her." "And he said to the woman (verse 11), Neither do I condemn thee; go, and sin no more."

The laxity of this sentence is not only opposed to the Mosaic injunction (Deuteronomy 22:22), "Thou shalt remove the evil from the midst of thee," but it is also practically disavowed by the Christian legislation, according to which, the adulteress is subjected to the severest rigor of the law, on account of the injury it would necessarily occasion to the happiness of society.

Chapter 48: A 7th proof by Jesus against the trinity doctrine (John 8:40)

John 8:40, "But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth which I have heard of God."

If he had been identical with God, he would not have told the Jews that he had received his revelation from God. The truth proceeds from his own mouth, that he was not a Deity incarnate. What the opinion of his disciples was regarding this Divinity subsequently attributed to him, is sufficiently manifest, in spite of the many obscure expressions that occur in the New Testament; for instance, Paul says plainly, in his epistle to the Romans, chapter 5:15, "The gift of grace which is by One Man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many." In every part of the New Testament where Jesus speaks of himself, he represents himself as the Son of Man, and not as God.

Chapter 49: Union of faith not accomplished by Jesus as claimed in John 10:16

John 10:16, "And other sheep I [Jesus] have, which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice, and there shall be one fold and one shepherd."

The truth which is contained in this passage has no reference to himself, for the union of faith was not accomplished by him, and will only take place at a future period, when the proper time shall arrive. This is testified by the following passages of Scripture. Isaiah, in chapter 45:23, says, "Thus I have sworn by myself the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, For unto me every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall swear." Zephaniah 3:9, "For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord, to serve Him with one consent." "The predominance of Judaism over all the religions of the Gentiles is dwelt on in the following extracts from the prophets: Isaiah 52:1, "Awake, awake, put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the Holy City; for henceforth there shall no more come unto thee, the uncircumcised and the unclean." Ibid. chapter 66:23, "And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, saith the Lord." Zechariah 14:16, "And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of Hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles." As to the attribution of the sovereignty of empires to the future King Messiah, we find in Daniel 2:44, "And in the days of these kings shall the God of Heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed, and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; but it shall break in pieces and consume all those kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever."

Ibid. 7:27, "And the kingdom and the dominion, and the greatness of dominion under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all the dominions shall serve and obey Him." Numbers 24:17, "I see it [it will not happen] now, I behold it, but not nigh; there shall come a star out of Jacob, and a sceptre shall rise out of Judah, and he shall smite the corners of Moab, and overthrow the children of Sheth."

Chapter 50: Refutation of Jesus' claim (John 10:30) that he and God are one

John 10:30, "I [Jesus] and my Father are one." According to the opinion prevailing among the Christians, Jesus declared in these words his perfect identity with the Godhead; but we have already noticed a passage which completely refutes this view. For we find in Mark 13:32, "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the son, but the Father."

Every attempt to reconcile the two contradictory verses, only leads to new perplexities. The more we examine into the purport of the New Testament, the more clearly we perceive its general tenor is not to deify Jesus; and that the doctrines which assign to him the title of God, have arisen from want of due investigation, and are not upheld by the force of sound argument.

Chapter 51: Jesus uses a psalm that admonishes his claim to be Son of God

John 10:33-36, "The Jews answered him [Jesus], For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

"Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said ye are gods? If he called them gods unto whom the Word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken: say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God"?

The equivocal reply of Jesus for styling himself God, argues more against than in favor of his claim. In quoting in his above defense the words of Psalm 82:6, "I have said, Ye are gods, and sons of the Most High altogether," he has not borne in mind that the psalmist spoke with the very purpose of showing that those who call themselves sons of God, betray by their own nature that they delude themselves and others; for he goes on to say, "But surely ye die like other men, and fall like any one of the princes." The occurrence of the word Elohim (gods), does not even show that the Divine Being is really alluded to. We have instances that both angels and judges are designated by that term and that it is equal to the expression of higher powers or authorities. See Judges 13:22, "We must die, for we have seen an "Elohim"(a superior being). In Exodus 22:8 [22:9], we read, "The cause of both men shall come before the Elohim" (the judicial authorities), and whom those Elohim find guilty, "he shall pay a double portion to his neighbor." Similar use is made of the word Elohim in various places of our Scriptures. In Psalm 82:1, the word gods [Elohim] has the same signification as angels and messengers of the Almighty.

When God said to Moses, "Behold I have made thee a god unto Pharaoh," He spoke merely of him as of a messenger

who came in the name of the Most High. The misquoted passages abounding in the New Testament betray the scanty and superficial knowledge its authors possessed of the language and purport of our Holy Scripture.

Chapter 52: Jesus' examples of unity contradict the Trinity concept or include the apostles

John 10:38, "That ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in Him." The same is repeated in chapter 14:11. In chapter 17:21, it is said, "That they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in us; that the world may believe that Thou hast sent me. And the glory which Thou gavest me, I have given them, that they may be one even as we are one. I in them, and Thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one," etc.

The junction of Father and Son is conferred also upon the twelve apostles. If therefore, the Christians thought it necessary to change their belief in the Divine unity, they were not justified in adopting the term "Trinity," inasmuch as the twelve apostles are placed on an equality with Jesus, and they might, with the same latitude of argument, be well included in the coalition of Divine personages.

Chapter 53: Jesus claims all power and knowledge from God, yet admits lack of same

John 13:3, "Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands," etc. See also *ibid.* 16:15, "All things that the Father hath are mine;" and Matthew 28:18, "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth."

This assumption of Supreme dominion is in total opposition to the often-quoted passage of Mark 13:32, "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the son, but the Father only." A like inconsistency in ascribing to Jesus at one time the possession, and at another a deficiency, of Supreme dominion, is perceptible in Matthew 20:23, where Jesus owns that it is not within his power to allot to the meritorious certain distinctions in future life. We have before quoted from Matthew 8:20, that Jesus confessed he had no place on which to rest his head, and was poorer than the fox in the field and the bird of the heavens. In John 14:28, he states, "The Father is greater than I." Such repeated discrepancies must deprive the New Testament of all title of a genuine and an inspired work.

Chapter 54: Jesus gives a commandment of Moses, but says it is a new commandment

John 13:34, Jesus asserts, "A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another," etc.

This commandment was by no means a new one. Moses had inculcated it in the words [Leviticus 19:18], "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thy self." Matthew 19:19, and 22:39, admit that Moses was the first who promulgated this precept.

Chapter 55: Jesus admits to being only God's messenger, not God Himself

John 17:3, Jesus says, "And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent."

In this verse, Jesus acknowledged himself to be merely a messenger, and not an integral part of the Deity. The awe and worship due to the Almighty is also, in 1 Timothy 1:17, declared to belong to God alone; for we find there, "Now unto the king eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever, amen."

If Jesus does not share the glory of God, he must be dependant on the will of his Creator, like every other creature.

Chapter 56: Account of Judas' betrayal differs in John from Synoptics

John 18:3-5, etc., "Judas Iscariot having received a band of men from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh with lanterns," etc., and was asked by Jesus, "Whom seek ye? and they answered and said, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also, who betrayed him, stood with them."

This account of the betrayal differs from that given in Matthew 26:47-49; Mark 14:43-46; and Luke 22:47-48; for according to those authors of the respective parts of the Gospel, Judas gave a secret sign to his companions, saying, "Him whom I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast."

Chapter 57: The claim that the Jews lost Israel because they killed Jesus contradicted in NT

John 19:15, "The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar."

Those who are of opinion that the Jews lost their independence on account of their putting Jesus to death, find here a complete refutation. The Caesar alluded to was

the Emperor Tiberius, who had, according to Luke 3:1, placed Pilate over Jerusalem.

Chapter 58: Jesus again admits to not being God

John 20:17, "Jesus saith unto her [Mary Magdalene], Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God."

Jesus showed here clearly that, he was no God, but was in the same subjection to God as his brethren.

It cannot, therefore, be asserted on the authority of this passage, that Jesus meant anything more by styling himself "the Son of God," than the Holy Scriptures indicate by such passages as Deuteronomy 14:1, "Ye are children of the Lord your God." The expression "Son of God" has not the slightest reference to a Superhuman Being.

Chapter 59: Jesus shows he didn't consider himself to be the restorer of the kingdom

Acts 1:6-7, "When they [the Apostles], therefore, were come together, they asked of Jesus, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons which the Father has put in his own power."

The enquirers were evidently awaiting the restoration, and learned from his own avowal, that he did not consider himself the restorer of the kingdom of the Jews. At the same time he owned, that the termination of Israel's exile is only known to the Almighty. If Jesus had considered himself divinely inspired, he would have given an answer in unison with his supernatural knowledge.

Chapter 60: The duration of a religion does not prove the veracity of its tenets

Acts 5:34-36, "Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, and said unto the Jews, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these men; for if this council, or this work, be of men, it will come to nought:" (verse 39) "but if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest, haply (perhaps) ye be found even to fight against God."

The subject is cited here for the purpose of following the order of the passages which claim a refutation. We have already noticed that the duration of a sect does not constitute a proof of the veracity of their tenets, otherwise, the Mahomedan faith would be entitled to nearly the same belief as that of the Christians.

Chapter 61: The New Testament's error in the chronology of Abraham's migrations

Acts 7:4, "Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans and dwelt in Charran, and from thence when his father was dead, they brought him into this land wherein ye now dwell." We have already pointed out that this statement of Abraham's departure from Charran, after the death of his father, is erroneous. Instead of recapitulating our proof, we refer the reader to chapter 45, of the first part of this work.

It is true that the death of Therah, though happening after the departure of Abraham, is mentioned before it; but that is the frequent mode of Scripture narrative. In the same way we find the death of Isaac recorded before the selling of Joseph, although a brief calculation would show that he survived thirteen years after the selling of his grandson.

Chapter 62: An example that Jesus' disciples were superficially versed in Scripture

Acts 7:7, "And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God, and afterwards shall they come forth and serve me in this place."

From this quotation it appears, that the disciples of Jesus were but superficially versed in biblical knowledge. For in Genesis (chapter 15:14) no such words as "in this place" are to be found; and in Exodus 3:12, the expression is, "When thou shalt bring out this people from Egypt, ye shall serve God on this mountain."

Chapter 63: Six more examples that Jesus' disciples were superficially versed in Scripture

Acts 7:14-16, "Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls. So Jacob went down into Egypt and died, he and our fathers, and were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor, the father of Sychem."

The many errors put together in so a small compass are sufficiently obvious. In the first place, we know that Jacob's family that came down to Egypt, inclusive of Joseph and his sons, amounted to seventy persons, and not to seventy-five. See Genesis 46:27, and Deuteronomy 10:22.

Secondly, Jacob was not buried in Sychem (Scha-chem), but in the cave of Machpelah, in Hebron.

Thirdly, The "fathers" of the several tribes were not buried in Egypt, Joseph only being buried there, but his remains

Moses carried away with him at the time of the departure of the Israelites from Egypt.

Fourthly, Abraham did not buy the cave of Mach-pelah of the children of Emmor (Hamor), the son of Schachem," but of Ephron, the Hittite.

Fifthly, the plot of field, situated near Schachem, was purchased by Jacob, and not by Abraham. The author of the Acts had but a confused idea of the several purchases made by the patriarchs Abraham and Jacob, and his statements respecting them must have been from hearsay.

Sixthly, Schachem (Schechem, Sychem) was the son, and not the father of Emmor (Hamor).

Chapter 64: The apostles misquote Amos

Acts 7:43, "Yea, ye took the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them, and I will carry you away beyond Babylon."

This quotation from the prophecy of Amos is incorrect. In chapter 5:26-27, it is thus expressed: "But ye have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch, and Chiun your images, the star of your God, which ye made to yourselves. Therefore I will cause you to go into captivity beyond Damascus," etc. Quotations misapplied, or garbled, destroy the authenticity of a work instead of supporting it.

Chapter 65: The irony of modern disbelief in sorcery in conjunction with stories of same in NT

Acts 8:9-11, "There was a certain man called Simon, which before time in the same city, used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one, to whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God, and to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries."

In days when credulity and superstition were rife, and sorceresses were deemed to be inspired messengers of the Almighty, it was easy to impress a belief that the son of a woman was an incarnate deity, but in an age, when sorcery is discredited, and superstition discouraged, it is strange that such a belief should be inculcated, and that men should attempt to convert the Jews to the inconsistent doctrines that still prevail, that Jesus was a God on earth.

Chapter 66: Inconsistencies in Christian text regarding food

Acts 10:11-15, "And Peter saw heaven opened; and a certain vessel descending unto him, wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts,

and creeping things, and fowls of the air. And there came a voice to him, saying, arise, Peter, kill and eat. But Peter said, Not so, Lord, for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean. And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common." The same is stated *ibid* chapter 11:9. In Paul's first epistle to the Corinthians, chapter 10:25, the following doctrine is taught: "Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no questions for conscience sake." Mark, (chapter 7:15) declares only such things unclean which come out of the mouth, but not those which go into the mouth. We have already animadverted on the inconsistency of such declarations when compared with the stringent injunction enforced in the very same book, to abstain most rigidly from blood and flesh of torn or strangled beasts. See what we have noticed before, when treating on Matthew 15 in the Second Part of this Work.

Chapter 67: Paul's error regarding the length of King Saul's reign

Acts 13:21, Paul says of the Israelites, "And afterwards they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul, the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years."

Paul erred in assigning to Saul such a protracted reign. Saul had governed only two years when his dereliction of the will of God, in his war against the Amalekites, threw him into disfavor, so that he forfeited his crown. Samuel was then immediately sent to anoint David, who was about twenty years old; when he [David] ascended the throne, he was but thirty years of age (see 2 Samuel 5:4); consequently Saul could not have governed Israel more than ten years. If we follow a hypothesis of Albo, the author of the book, entitled *Sepher Ikkarim*, Saul did not occupy the throne even so long a time; but certainly could not have remained king for forty years.

Chapter 68: Paul's misuse of Psalm 2 to prove Jesus is the Son of God

Acts 13:33, Paul proves that Jesus is the Son of God, by quoting from the second Psalm: "Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee."

The reference to that psalm is objectionable, since the royal psalmist spoke here of his own person. It was against himself that the Gentiles raged, and carried on their warfare, when he had commenced his government.

See 2 Samuel 5:17, "And the Philistines had heard that they had anointed David king over Israel, and all the Philistines came to seek David," etc.

He called himself justly the Messiah, Anointed of the Lord, for that title was lawfully given to him as the ruler of his people. Having been established as the chief of Israel, by the express command of the Lord, he was justified to mark those rebelling against him as rising "against the Lord, and

against His Anointed." The words in Psalm 2, "And I have anointed my king," occur in the actual history of David, in 1 Samuel 16:1, "I shall send thee to Jesse, of Bethlehem, for among his sons I have seen for myself a king." "Zion, my holy mountain," (Psalm 2:6), which was the metropolis, and was called "the city of David." It was that king to whom it was said, "Thou art my son, I have this day begotten thee." The title Son, was given to all those who, by faithful obedience, attached themselves to the service of God. In Exodus 4:22, Israel was called "my first-born son"; and in Hosea 2:1 [1:10], "It will be said unto them, Ye are the sons of the living God." On the day when Samuel anointed David as king of Israel, "he was changed into another man"; and we read in 1 Samuel 16:13, "And Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren, and the Spirit of the Lord descended upon him." The adoption of man by God is called, in biblical language, "to beget." See Deuteronomy 32:18, "Thou hast forgotten the rock that begat thee." The words [Psalm 2:8], "Ask of me, and I shall give nations for an inheritance," were fulfilled to David, who humbled the Philistines (2 Samuel 8:1), and made Ammon, and Moab, and Edom, tributary to himself. With reference to Jesus, he had no dominion whatever to merit the title of a Messiah (Anointed King). He said of himself that he was [Matthew 20:28] "not come to be ministered (served) unto, but to minister" (serve others). Moreover, why should Jesus have been invited to "Ask of me, and I will give nations for an inheritance," since as the incarnate Son of God, the whole earth ought to have belonged to him, and not some selected portion of it?

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 69: Paul misunderstands Psalm 16:10

Acts 13:35-37, Paul says, "Wherefore, he says also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption; but he whom God raised again, saw no corruption."

The addition, that "David saw corruption," shows that Paul misunderstood the sense of the passage he quoted. The word *schachet* (rendered "corruption") means a pit, and is synonymous with grave; for David relied on the salvation of the soul of the righteous, and expressed his conviction, that the body alone goes down to the pit, and not the soul with it, into perdition.

Passages, in which the word *schachet* (pit) occurs, in Psalm 94:13, "Until a pit is dug for the iniquitous man." Proverbs 26:27, "He who diggeth a pit, shall fall into it." Psalm 7:16 [7:15], "He who makes a hole and diggeth it, will fall into the pit he hath made." We cannot perceive, therefore, the authority Paul had to apply the words of that psalm otherwise than in a sense in which its author had evidently designed it.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 70: Peter contradicts Jesus regarding obedience to Torah

Acts 15 from verse 1 to 12. It is there related that certain men of the sect of the Pharisees rose up, and said that the Gentiles could not be saved unless they abided by the law of Moses, and that, upon the delivery of this opinion, the apostles and elders came together to deliberate; and they argued much upon this matter. Peter then settled the dispute by saying, "Why tempt ye God to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear. But we believe that, through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they."

Peter, by this remonstrance, contradicts the opinion held by Jesus, as is shown by the advice given to the rich man, who had consulted him respecting which of the laws he should observe, etc. (See Matthew 19:16-19) We have, moreover, in a former chapter, shown that the law of Jesus, when carried out to the letter, is more rigorous than the Mosaic code, and utterly impracticable in the affairs of social life. We have already pointed out that the suggestion made by Jesus to the rich man, to the effect that he should sell all he had and distribute the money among the poor, was wisely disregarded by all his disciples and followers. Paul also deemed it proper to designate the law of Moses "a yoke of bondage" (Galatians 5:1), and that he would not submit to the passive endurance of the humiliation recommended by Jesus. See Chapter 27 of the Second Part of this work.

Chapter 71: James twists Amos 9:12 to say the Gentiles will acquire the Jewish inheritance

Acts 15:17, the Apostle James cites a verse from Amos 9:12, changed into the following terms:—"That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

The true passage runs thus:—"In order that those may inherit the remainder of Edom, and of all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord who doeth this." The prophecy does not predict the acquisition of the inheritance in favor of other men, but in favor of Israel, "upon whom the name of the Lord is called. See Deuteronomy 28:10, "And all the people of the earth shall see that the name of the Lord is called upon thee."

Chapter 72: Another inconsistency between Jesus' teachings and additional doctrines

Acts 15:20, 29. The apostles enjoin on their followers the frequently-repeated commands to abstain from sacrifices to idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood. How the Christians respect these prohibitions we have already adverted to in Chapter 49 and 50 in the First Part of this work.

Chapter 73: Paul's example of having Timothy circumcised conflicts with later doctrines

Acts 16:1, 3, "Paul, going to Derbe and Lystra, met Timothy, the son of a certain woman who was a Jewess, and he took and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in those quarters."

From this quotation and the records of history, it is evident that original Christianity did not dispense with the circumcision of Jews received within its pale. Is it not then sinful to attempt to persuade Jews to abandon those rites which the founders and first propagators of the Christian religion actually confirmed by their own acts?

Chapter 74: Paul's example of having Timothy circumcised conflicts with his own teaching

Acts 16:3. Paul, by circumcising Timothy, proved that the Mosaic dispensation of circumcision had not been abrogated. On the other hand, he wrote to the Galatians (chapter 5:2-3), "Behold, I, Paul, say unto you, that, if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing; for I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law." If circumcision were of no avail for Timothy, why did his master circumcise him? If, however, that sacred act was indispensable, and bound the man fully through the covenant of Abraham to adhere to the commandments and the laws of Moses, how is it that Paul deemed it perfectly consistent to break by precept those very teachings of Moses?

Chapter 75: Paul's answer to "what must I do to be saved" conflicts with Jesus' answer

Acts 16:30-31. The keeper of the prison asked Paul and Silas, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved? and they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved and thy house."

The answer of the apostles does not coincide with the answer given by Jesus in Matthew 19:16-19; Mark 10:17-19; and Luke 18:19-20; wherein he exacted of the inquirer full obedience to the laws of Moses, in order to obtain salvation.

Chapter 76: Deifying humans was a common pagan practice, explaining Jesus' deification

Acts 28:3-5. Paul being bitten by a viper, felt no harm from the effects of the poisonous bite, and was, therefore, held by the barbarians surrounding him, to be a God.

The ease with which a human being was deified in those days, accounts for the astonishing superstitious belief; that Jesus was at the same time mortal and a God.

Chapter 77: Paul says death reigned only until the Mosaic law, Jesus' death inconsequential

PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS

Romans 5:14, "Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression."

Other copies have the contrary: "Who had sinned after the similitude," etc.

If death reigned to the days of Moses only, how is the question to be explained: How could Jesus be considered the Savior of mankind, if the dominion of death had been made to cease through the laws of Moses, [Leviticus 18:5] "which, if a man performeth, he liveth in them?" See the question fully discussed in chapter one of the First Part of this work.

Chapter 78: Paul twists Hosea 1 to refer to Gentiles, when it actually refers to Israel

Romans 9:24-26, "Even us, whom he has called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles. As he says also in Hosea, I will call them my people, which were not my people, and her beloved which was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they be called the children of the living God."

It is immaterial for us to know whether it was ignorance or intentional perversion which prompted Paul to refer to Hosea for a purpose which that prophet had not in view. It suffices to refer to Hosea 1:9, in order to ascertain that the prophet alludes not to the Gentiles, but exclusively to Israel, who, when obedient to the law of God, were to be

called Ammi, ("my people)," and "Ruhamah," "(she who is pitied);" but when disobedient they were to be called Lo-Ammi, "(not my people)," and Lo Ruhamah "(not to be pitied)." And again in chapter 2:1 [1:10], we read, "And it shall come to pass that in the place where it was said unto them [Israel], Ye are the sons of the living God."

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 79: Taking Hebrew scriptures out of context is its own refutation, examples given

Romans 9:33, "As it is written, Behold, I lay in Zion a stumbling stone and a rock of offence, and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed."

This passage is a collection of short sentences, ignorantly or ingeniously packed together, to show that Jesus is the only Savior of those who found "their stumbling block in Zion." In chapter 8:14 of Isaiah, we find, "And he shall be for a sanctuary and a stumbling stone, as a rock of offence to the two houses of Israel, and as a snare and a gin to the inhabitants of Jerusalem." And the prophet continues, (chapter 28:16), "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold I have laid a foundation in Zion, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, well established, well founded. He who believes shall not hasten (away from it)."

Another incorrect quotation from our Scriptures is also to be found in Romans 10:11, "For the Scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed." Peter in his first Epistle, (chapter 2:6), quotes from treacherous memory, "Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, elect, precious, and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded."

By arbitrarily detaching or connecting various words of Scripture to verify doctrines, not taught in our Sacred Books, is, according to our opinion, its own refutation, and highly blamable.

Chapter 80: Words of God through Moses in Deuteronomy 30:14 misconstrued by Paul

Romans 10:6-9, "Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down! from above); or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead). But what saith it (viz. Scripture)? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that is, the word of I faith which we preach: That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God has raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved."

If those to whom Paul was preaching had referred to the thirtieth chapter of Deuteronomy, verse 14, they might

have perceived that the words of Moses were misconstrued by the Apostle. That part of our law tells us merely that it is within the reach of every man to be penitent, and obtain mercy and pardon.

Our lawgiver having spoken in general terms, "If thou wilt turn to the Lord thy God, with all thy heart and all thy soul," etc., goes on to say, (Deuteronomy 30:11) "For the commandment which I give thee this day is not hidden from thee, nor is it too far off. It is not in heaven that thou mightest say, Who shall go up into heaven for us, and bring it down for us that we may practice it?" etc.

It having been shown that the nature of the gift of mercy is put in juxtaposition with the ease of acquiring it, we are enabled to comprehend the expression, "This matter is very near unto thee, it is in thy heart and thy mouth that thou mayest do it."

Chapter 81: Isaiah 59:20 misconstrued by Paul

Romans 11:26, "And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob."

The true words of the prophet (Isaiah 59:20), do not indicate that the Messiah will turn away ungodliness from Jacob, but that "a redeemer will come to Zion, and to those who return from transgression in Jacob, saith the Lord."

Chapter 82: Paul says Jesus' death broke Satan's power, yet also says Satan is still in power

Romans 16:20, "And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly," etc. In 1 Thessalonians 2:18, Paul says, "We would have come unto you again, even I, Paul, but Satan hindered us."

The Christians, in consequence of the above quotations, maintain the belief that the power of Satan was broken by the death of Jesus, who "bruised the head of the serpent." If so, how then did it happen that Satan, after the death of Jesus, had such sway as to obstruct the very apostles of Jesus in the pursuit of their ministrations?

Chapter 83: Paul condemns breaking Mosaic laws from which Christians are supposedly free

PAUL'S FIRST EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS

1 Corinthians 5:1, Paul reproaches his followers that "there be fornication among them, and that one of them had committed incest by marrying his father's wife."

If Paul, as all his writings indicate, considered the Christians dispensed from observing the Mosaic Law, where was their boundary of religious duties or transgressions, seeing that Jesus had not promulgated a new code of laws? Surely, no permission had been granted by the founder of Christianity, so that his followers should observe part of the Mosaic laws, and reject the remainder.

Chapter 84: Paul's great presumption that man would someday judge angels

1 Corinthians 6:3, Paul says, "Know ye that we shall judge angels?"

Great must have been the Apostle's presumption if he believed that corporeal man should be the judge of incorporeal beings! The greatest prophets of Israel admitted that the angels were beyond the comprehension of our finite sense. How could the invisible be summoned before the tribunal of the visible?

Chapter 85: Another example of Paul's inconsistency regarding circumcision

1 Corinthians 7:18-20, "Is any man called being circumcised, let him not become uncircumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision, let him not be circumcised. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God. Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called."

In the Epistle to the Galatians, chapter 5:3, he also says, "For I testify again to every man that is circumcised that he is a debtor to do the whole law." These words ought to be kept in constant remembrance by those Christians who urge us to abandon our holy faith and adopt their religious observances.

Chapter 86: Another factual error in the allegedly perfect and inspired NT

1 Corinthians 10:8, "Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand."

In this brief passage there is an error, which in every other work might pass unnoticed. A book, which assumes to be dictated by inspiration, ought to be accurate in every particular. In Numbers 25:9, we read that four and twenty thousand, and not three and twenty thousand, fell by the visitation of pestilence.

Chapter 87: Another example of concatenating two unrelated verses to support a doctrine

1 Corinthians 15:54-55, "So, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory; O Death, where is thy sting! O grave, where is thy victory!"

This passage is not a true quotation from our Scripture, being a mixture of two unconnected verses. Isaiah, chapter 25:8, says only, "He has swallowed up Death to perpetuity"; and Hosea, chapter 13:14, says, "Where are thy pestilences, O Death? Where are thy destructions, O grave?"

Chapter 88: Paul contradicts John regarding whether or not Jesus' brother James believed

PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS

Galatians 1:18, "Then, after three years, I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days. But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James, the Lord's brother."

Paul represents here, James, the brother of Jesus, as an apostle of Jesus, and he contradicts thereby the statement made by John, chapter 7:5, "For neither did his [viz., Jesus'] brethren believe in Him." We have enlarged on these contradictions in our discussions on Luke 2 and Mark 3.

Chapter 89: Paul's assertion that a shameful death released Jesus' followers from God's law

Galatians 3:13, Paul says, "Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, Cursed is every man that hangeth on a tree."

It is a most extraordinary conclusion, that an ignominious death, suffered by Jesus, should have become the means of releasing his followers from their adherence to the ancient law of God, in order not to be subjected to the curse of the law. Surely submission to, and not abandonment of the law, should have been recommended.

Chapter 90: Ignorance of Hebrew language leads Paul to the wrong conclusion about "seed"

Galatians 3:16, "Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made: He saith not, and to seeds as of many; but as of one, and to thy seed, which is Christ."

Want of acquaintance with the genius of the Hebrew language, has led the author of the epistle to a wrong conclusion. When seed signifies posterity, it is never put in the plural number. See Genesis 13:15, "For all the land which thou seest, I will give to thee, and to thy seed for evermore." Immediately after this promise, we read, [Genesis 13:16] "And thy seed shall be like the dust of the earth." This relates to the numbers of individuals, and not to a single individual. Again, we find in Genesis 15:5, "And He caused him to go out (of the house) and He spake, Look now up to heaven, and count the stars, if thou canst count them; and He said unto him Thus shall be thy seed."

Ibid verse 13, "And He spake unto Abraham, Thou shalt surely know that thy seed shall be strangers in a land which is not theirs." These examples may suffice, but similar ones may be found in various parts of Scripture. These annotations afford abundant proof that the term seed, in the promise given to Abraham, refers to an entire nation.

Chapter 91: Psalm 68 misquoted and misconstrued

PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS

Ephesians 4:8, "Wherefore, he saith, when he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men."

The quotation seems to be made from memory. The psalmist (68:19 [68:18]) who addresses the Almighty, says, "Thou hast taken gifts from men," and not thou hast given gifts.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 92: An example of Paul mentioning men first before God leads to questions

PAUL'S FIRST EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS.

1 Thessalonians 2:10, Paul says, "Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblamably, we behaved ourselves among you that believe."

In a teacher of men, whose object it was to establish a new faith, it appears unbecoming to mention first, men, as witnesses, and secondly, God. A candid perusal of the writings of Paul accounts for this peculiarity of arranging his ideas. He impresses on the reader the suspicion that he was guided by expediency, more than by true religious feeling, and that his mind was not influenced by the elevated sentiments of piety.

Chapter 93: James epistle of works completely contradicts Paul's gospel of faith alone

EPISTLE OF JAMES

James 2:14, to the end of the chapter. The author of this Epistle recommends good works as superior to mere faith, and then he continues, "Was not Abraham, our father, justified by works, when he had offered Isaac, his son, upon the altar? Likewise also, was not Rahab, the harlot, justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also."

The opinion here cited meets with the contradiction of Paul, who writes in his Epistle to the Romans, chapter 3:20, "Therefore, by deeds of the law shall no flesh be justified." Again, he says, in the same chapter, verse 28, "Therefore, we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law." In his Epistle to the Galatians, chapter 2:16, Paul repeats the assertion, that faith in Jesus is of greater avail than the observance of the law, by saying, "Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by faith in Jesus Christ." At the end of that chapter, he maintains, "If righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain." The like doctrine is enforced in chapter 3 from the beginning to the end. Also throughout the Epistle to the Hebrews, chapter 11, it is maintained that faith is preferable to works. See again *ibid* verse 17, where it is said, "Abraham, tried by faith, offered up Isaac." Again, *ibid* verse 31, "By faith, the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies in peace." We, Jews, are not anxious to reconcile the discrepancies occurring in the New Testament, and to decide whether more truth is to be found in one than in the other of those opinions. All our aspirations lead us to adopt a mode of life in exact conformity with the Holy Law, which tells us, [Deuteronomy 6:25] "And it shall be accounted to us as righteousness if we keep and fulfill all these commands."

Chapter 94: Troki notes that the book of Hebrews was rejected as apocryphal by early church

EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS

This Epistle is the production of an anonymous writer. Some have ascribed it to Luke, others to Paul. In the early days of Christianity it was rejected as Apocryphal.

Chapter 95: More verses from TN"K misused in Hebrew to prove Jesus is God

Hebrews 1:5-9, "For unto which of the angels said he, in former times, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee? And, again, I will be to him a father, and he shall be to me a son. And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he says, Let all the angels of God worship him. And of the angels, he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire? But to the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever. A sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows."

The errors of the author of this epistle are as many as the quotations with which he strives to confirm his views. The connection established between Jesus and the seventh verse of Psalm 2, "Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee," we have already presented in a proper light in our remarks on Acts 8:33. We have there fully proved that David applied those elevated words to himself. Hence Christians are not justified in deducing from it doctrinal points. The promise made in 2 Samuel 7:14:, "I shall be unto him as a father, and he shall be to me as a son," was made regarding Solomon, the son of David. The Christians themselves would not like to refer these words to Jesus, since the prophecy contains the prediction, "Whom, if he commit iniquity, I shall chastise him with the rod of men, and with the stripes of the children of men." As to Jesus, it is well known that his worshippers are impressed with the conviction that he never committed any sin.

The author of the Epistle pretends to discover in our Scripture, that the angels of God were bound to worship Jesus. We find, in Psalm 97:7, "All ye gods worship Him," viz., that God who is spoken of as the Lord of the whole earth. The words, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever," are wrongly quoted from Psalm 45:7 [45:6]. We read there *Kis-au-hau Elohim*, which means, "Thy throne (is) of God," and not "Thy throne, O God." Thus we find, in 1 Chronicles 29:23, "And Solomon sat on the throne of the Lord." The Lord being the acknowledged king of Israel, the throne occupied by David and his posterity was described as the throne of the Lord. This throne is to be occupied by the descendants of David for time everlasting.

Thus Daniel prophesies, in chapter 2:44, "The God of heaven will establish a throne which shall not be destroyed throughout eternity."

To be convinced that our interpretation is correct, let the reader merely refer to the continuation of the words of Psalm 45:8 [45:7], "Thou lovest righteousness and hatest iniquity; therefore hath God, even thy God, anointed thee." If Jesus is God, could the Psalmist address him with such words as thy God?

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 96: The strange doctrine that Jesus was lower than, yet worshipped by the angels

Hebrews 2:7, "Thou madest him a little lower than the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour." In verse 9, it is said, "Jesus who was made a little lower than the angels." It is remarkable that Jesus, as the inferior being, should have been destined to be worshipped by the angels, who were his superiors. On referring to the eighth Psalm, Psalm verses 4-7 [8:3-6], we find that the author of the Epistle, in quoting some words, has perverted their real purport. The Psalmist in using the ejaculation, "When I behold the heavens, the works of thy fingers, and the moon and the stars which thou hast fixed," must be understood as if he had expressed himself in the following words:—I am so struck with awe and wonder, that I feel the utter nothingness of human creatures; and I say to myself, "What is mortal man, that thou rememberest him, and the son of man, that thou takest note of him." The frailty and mortality of man, suggested to the Psalmist the sense of a deep humility; on the other hand, man is rendered conscious of his noble state, as the possessor of an immortal spirit, which makes him almost an equal to the ministering angels on high. It is with respect to this supreme endowment that the Psalmist exclaims, "Thou hast made him but little less than the angels and hast crowned him with glory and honour." Blessed with intelligence, he rules the inferior creatures of the field and the forest, of the air and the sea.

This Psalm has, consequently, no allusion to any non-Jewish doctrine, but is a sublime amplification of the divine resolve, as contained in Genesis 1:26, "We will make man in our image, according to our likeness, and they shall rule over the fish of the sea, and the birds of the heaven, and the beasts, and over the whole earth." Taking this plain view of the several portions of Scripture, the candid reader will agree with us, that the inflexible truth of our revealed writings does not allow the shade of a proof in favor of the rank given to Jesus in the mystical theology of the Christians.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 97: The Christian interpretation of the new covenant of Jeremiah 31:31 is in error

Hebrews 8:8. The following quotation is made from Jeremiah 31:31, "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel".

A refutation of the interpretation given by the Christians to this verse has been offered in Chapter 29 of the First Part of this work. The author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, in verse 13 of the same chapter, says, "In that he saith a new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away." The writer was not aware that spiritual matters do not wear out like old garments. He might have found a correct opinion in Psalm 111:7-8, "The works of His hands are truth and judgment; faithful are all His ordinances; well supported for ever and made with truth and integrity."

Equally decided are the words of Isaiah on this subject. He says, chapter 40:8, "Grass drieth up, the flower withereth, but the word of our God shall stand for ever."

Chapter 98: Psalm 40:7 misquoted to support notion that God did not want sacrifices

Hebrews 10:5. Referring to Psalm 40:7 [40:6], Paul states, "Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body thou hast prepared me."

The quotation is erroneous. The Psalmist says, "Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, mine ears thou hast opened; burnt offering and sin offering thou didst not desire." The Psalmist expressed by this, that obedience to God is the chief duty of man, and that listening to Him is better than an offering, and hearkening to Him "is more acceptable than the fat of rams."

That pious feelings, and not mere ceremonials, were the essential requisites, we have already demonstrated in the First Part of this work.

Note: chapter and verse numbers in brackets [] are the numbers used in the English bible.

Chapter 99: Dan is omitted from list of tribes, suggesting the biblical ignorance of author

REVELATION

Revelation 7:5-8. In enumerating the Twelve Tribes of Israel, the tribe of Dan is omitted, and that of Manasseh mentioned in its stead, although the tribe of Joseph might have naturally included that of Manasseh. This shows that the author of the Revelation was imperfectly acquainted with the very rudiments of Biblical history. If the instructor himself be uninstructed, what can his disciple profit by the knowledge emanating from such a source?

Chapter 100: Changes made against Jesus' teachings prohibited by Christians' own scripture

Revelation 22:18, 19, "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add to these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the Holy City, and from the things that are written in this book."

The Christians have nevertheless ventured to make changes of a most glaring nature. The removal of the Sabbath to the first day of the week is not authorized by Jesus or any of his apostles. The eating of blood, and the flesh of strangled beasts, etc., is a palpable infringement of the dictates of the apostles, as has been amply proved in Chapter 3 of the First Part of this work.

Thus, having accomplished all my intention, I offer thanks to God, who is One and Indivisible; He is the first and the last; besides Him there is no God.

THE END.